

Chapter 601

Chapter 601

George Zabel furiously slammed on the table and stood up. He then screamed at Harvey York in a fit of rage, “How dare you?! You dare to play tricks on me?! You’re not getting through this door today!”

Schwing!

In an instant, the two guards behind George unsheathed their daggers around their waist in unison.

At the same time, the basement door had swung open and soon after a mob came from outside, immediately surrounding Harvey and Yvonne Xavier.

They were all mercenaries and they had remarkable combat skills. The people that had experience on the battlefield all had murderous aura exuding from

Chapter 601

their bodies.

George looked coldly at Harvey and said, "Mr. York, are you not even going to ask about anybody that would even dare touch me?!"

"It's fine if the person supporting you came here, but you're just an agent and yet you even dare to act smug in front of me?! You're looking for death!"

George was infuriated. This was because nobody dared to provoke him in the past.

Harvey smiled and said, "It's just business. You're asking for that high of a price, it's only natural for me to lower it."

"I'm being sincere as well. Normally speaking, you shouldn't be getting any money when providing things like these to the other party."

George and his guards were shaking with anger after hearing what Harvey had said.

'Wanting to buy something like this that's worth fifty million dollars for a dollar? What is he

Chapter 601

thinking?’

George sized up Harvey and said, “Are you serious?”

“Of course, one dollar.” Harvey nodded and said.

“Then I’ll be serious as well. You either buy it for fifty million dollars, or I cripple your legs. It’s your call!”

George forcefully calmed himself down.

“Heh...”

Harvey chuckled and then looked at Yvonne.

“I’m so scared, someone wants to cripple me!”

Yvonne smiled.

“Rest assured, CEO. I’ll protect you.”

Their tone seemed like they were mocking George.

He would let a weak lady protect him?

‘Is he joking?’

George Zabel’s eyes twitched, he then said: “Mr.

Chapter 601

York, do you think I'm kidding with you?

“You think the both of you can still walk out of here alive?”

“You know how I can be in this line of business and no one would dare to cross me?”

“That's because all of my guards are all retired guards, every single one of them had been in real combat!”

“Their combat skills are not something a person that learned some janky kung-fu can ever imagine!”

“Not just you, the person behind you will also pay for even thinking of provoking me!”

“How can you even compare yourself to me? Alongside this woman? What a joke!”

Yvonne had checked beforehand, George did have deep pockets.

Even though he was not a crime lord, he dabbled in the grey area. He still had some capabilities.

Chapter 601

Not only did he have connections with the good and bad, he had quite a few secrets in his grasp and his guards were tough as well. Nobody in Buckwood would have dared to touch him.

Of course, Harvey was in the list as well.

A shame that George did not even think of the possibility.

“Done bluffing?” Harvey calmly said.

“Cripple him!”

Everyone heard George’s order while he fumed with anger.

Harvey stood up and planted his gaze on the guards. He casually took off his shirt and let out a cold smile.

“Do you want to go one by one? Or are all of you coming at once?”

The moment everyone saw him take off his shirt,

Chapter 601

the professional bodyguards' proud faces had instantly disappeared. All of them were terrified by Harvey's imposing character.

Telegram @chinesenovels

Chapter 602

Chapter 602

They could clearly see the well-proportioned muscles on his body, to the point that they could consider it to be perfect.

At the same time, there were marks arranged in a crisscross pattern on his body and they looked like really light scars. At least a few hundred strips of scars could be seen.

But the lighter the scars, the older the scars were made. Some scars were even made many years ago.

Those scars were there for a reason, they looked like scars that were produced by undergoing some sort of physical training that ordinary people could never comprehend.

Even if they were mercenaries, it would be glorious to have just ten of those scars.

Chapter 602

But there were at least hundreds of light scars on Harvey York's body. It was truly unimaginable.

At that moment, George Zabel saw his own highly paid guards trembling in fear. He pondered with a frown on his face and then said, "What are you all doing? Are you scared?"

"A live-in son-in-law made you scared?"

"Did I not feed you at all today?"

"Whoever takes him down gets one hundred and fifty thousand dollars!"

In the midst of George's speech, someone finally went berserk. One of the guards immediately rushed forward.

Bang!

Harvey's movements were as swift as lightning. His fist landed right on the guard's chest with a bang.

The guard was shocked beyond belief. His body flew

Chapter 602

in the next moment, crashing into a wall thirty feet away. He kept twitching, it was impossible for him to even stand.

“Wing Chun.”

George’s face had turned as dark as night. He was an experienced man, he could clearly tell just by one look.

Nobody would have this level of power without honing it for years.

“Everyone now!”

Everyone realized that they met a formidable opponent, they all rushed forward in an instant.

“Aaaaaaah—”

“Ugh—”

Cries of pain had echoed throughout and moments after, the guards all landed on their backs facing the ground. All of them were paralyzed on the ground.

Yvonne Xavier was staring at her CEO while her face

Chapter 602

was flushed red as a strawberry.

“The CEO sure is handsome...”

George was terrified, he could not believe what he saw in front of him.

“The ancient technique of Wing Chun in South Light...”

“The legends say that there was only one man in the foreign family that had the technique passed down to him...”

“You’re not an agent, you’re... You’re...”

George felt like he was suffocated at that moment.

He had a bold guess, but he would not dare to even utter anything about it.

Because whether he guessed it right or wrong, he would not have a good ending.

“Now, can we talk about the price?”

Harvey put his shirt back on, then sipped his tea

Chapter 602

without a care in the world.

Thud!

George immediately kneeled. At that moment, his high and mighty attitude had been thrown out of the window. He trembled and said, "Sir York... I was blind as to who you actually are..."

"Does it concern me if you know or not? Let's keep talking business," Harvey said calmly.

George immediately replied, "I'll hand over the video footage, as well as all of the information that I have."

"Didn't I tell you that I'd offer one dollar? Do I look like a man that would coerce you to a trade?"

Harvey asked.

"Of course not, I was the one that asked for the price," George said while putting his hands over his face.

Yvonne had taken out a note and set it on the table after that.

Chapter 602

George respectfully picked up the dollar note and forced out a smile that looked uglier than a cry.

“Where is it?”

“Please, come this way...”

George barely gained back his cool and respectfully escorted Harvey and Yvonne to the archive room on the side.

Telegram @chinesenovels

Chapter 603

Chapter 603

The video was soon being played and casted on the television.

The video took place in an abandoned construction site beside Pearl River, there were many people present.

The Silvas were the group of people among them. All of the Silvas were there except Brent Silva.

And a group of young men and women were seen on the other side.

Harvey York took a closer look at the other group, he did not recognize any of them at that moment. He was going slowly and his sights had shifted toward one of the women there.

Margie Cloude.

The Cloudees were a first-class family and she was

Chapter 603

the Cloudes' collateral relative. She was also William Bell's girlfriend.

William was standing beside the river.

There seemed to be a few silhouettes standing on the Pearl River Bridge far away looking at this direction, but they were not that visible.

Next...

The Silvas walked forward and threw a bag of money in front of William Bell, then coldly said, "William Bell, tell us what we want to know and run away from this place with the money, or die here and end your lowly life. It's your choice."

"You... How did you know that I'm here?" William asked after his face had turned as dark as night.

"I brought them here. William, how could you possibly beat the Silvas? The Silvas are willing to negotiate with us, they promised it'll benefit us too. They already paid us their respects, don't be shameless. Just accept the offer already!" Margie

Chapter 603

coaxed him.

“That’s right, William. Even if you don’t think for yourself, maybe think about us too?”

“I followed you for so many years. If anything were to happen to us, will you still have the heart to do it?”

“Prince Silva already promised us all that we’d become upperclassmen, the only price was to expose the filth about everything he’s planned. What a fair trade!”

Naturally, William had felt quite betrayed at that moment.

Even his girlfriend, his most trusted girlfriend was telling him to give up, convincing him to betray Harvey.

“You all!”

William’s face was as pale as a ghost, he felt anguished.

He could not believe that his most trusted and most

Chapter 603

beloved person was opposing him at the most crucial moment.

“William Bell! Give us what we want, and you can have all the wealth and glory you want!

“But if you insist on being stubborn, your friends, your loved ones and even your parents would meet an end too horrible to even witness because of your decision...

“Are you really going to decline our offer?

“That man is already in the past. An opportunist would abandon an unfavorable cause, why are you still bitterly guarding this man’s family business?

“Tell us what we want, and we’ll cut you a share!

“It’s good to be our humble servant, don’t you think?” Someone from the Silvas said softly, trying to convince William, but he made no effort to disguise the disdain and scornful speech at all.

Because in their eyes, William was no different than a dog. There was truly not much difference.

Chapter 603

They were only acting loyal just to bargain for a good price.

William forced a laugh and said, "What do you know about anything? I am deeply indebted to that man, I trust that man too much. If it weren't for him, I would just be an ordinary person among all the others..."

"For me to betray him?! Impossible!"

Slap!

Margie walked up toward William and suddenly gave him a slap across his face.

"Worthless sack of trash, you will always be someone else's dog! You never even thought about me!"

"I did, I prepared something..."

William had a mournful expression.

"What did you prepare exactly? First, you betrayed

Chapter 603

the Yorks and now you betray the Silvas? If I stay with a worthless sack of trash like you, I'll be asking for my own death..."

Margie was furious yet her beautiful face was as cold as ice.

"William, if you do not abide by Prince Silva's request, I'll break up with you. We're going our separate ways from now on!"

"Margie..."

"Don't call me that, you're not worthy when you don't even know about anything."

At that moment, one of William's friends walked up and smiled.

"Prince Silva, William is the most considerate person I know. I don't think it's hard to make him speak, just torture his parents in front of him. He'll talk even if he doesn't want to at that moment..."

"Right right right, this should work!"

"That's such a good idea!"

Chapter 603

His friends were shouting in unison, as if they were devils themselves.

Telegram @chinesenovels

Chapter 604

Chapter 604

“You all!”

William Bell was shocked beyond belief.

He genuinely could not believe that the friends that he trusted would use ways like this to force the truth out from him...

“Quick, seize him!”

A person from the Silvas ordered.

At the next moment, William was in despair, his eyes shut tight and then jumped backward into the river.

In his helplessness, this was his only choice. He did not have any other way out.

After watching the whole video, Harvey York's face had turned as dark as night.

Chapter 604

Bang!

Harvey smashed a teacup beside him with his fist.

The teacup made out of solid marble was actually shattered to smithereens by his fist, with the sound of clattering of the pieces on the ground.

The murderous aura on Harvey had remained the same. At that moment, even the room felt like it had gotten colder.

Harvey did not think that William would have something like this befall him after he had left Buckwood for the past three days.

And to defend his grounds, William did not want to be forced by the others. He chose to end his own life.

George Zabel looked at Harvey on the side and instantly had a revelation while his whole body quivered.

He was certain that the man standing in front of him was the legend!

Chapter 604

The man was finally back!

With the wave of his hand, the entire South Light would be his to command.

Without a second thought, George swiftly said, “It was just as you saw. When William Bell jumped, these are the people that forced him... The Silvas, the Cloudes along with the people back there...

“The people are just small fries; you might not know them, but they were good friends of Mr. Bell...

“After Mr. Bell jumped, all these people had gotten benefits from the Silvas. They were all in charge of their own company...

“Especially Margie Cloude. Since she’s a collateral relative, there were more benefits for her...”

George was explaining while he took out documents, the newspaper, pictures and other related items as evidence.

Clatter...

Chapter 604

George was shocked to see that Harvey had crushed the teacup into powder.

This was more shocking than him shattering the solid marble teacup!

“Dead!

“I want every single one of them dead!”

Harvey barely muttered the words out of his mouth through gritted teeth!

George was extremely terrified to the point where the sounds of his knees slamming the ground echoed, he was truly afraid that Harvey would instantly kill him in a fit of rage.

“The people at the back, who are they?”

Harvey took a deep breath and forcefully calmed himself down and then pointed at the blurry silhouettes on the edge of the screen.

Even though Harvey was only on the other side of

Chapter 604

the screen, he felt that the silhouettes were quite familiar.

“They are... the four masters of the Yorks. I’ve spent enormous amounts of effort investigating this ...”

George hesitated at first but he still told him.

“Are they deeply involved with the incident?”

“Not sure.”

George forced a smile.

“I did not collect any evidence yet, maybe they were just passing by?”

“I got it.”

Harvey’s expression was as cold as ice.

Considering Quinton York and the others’ ways of doing things, even if there were leads of them being involved, they would not possibly leave any evidence.

Chapter 604

People that had a high status would not sully their own hands with whatever they did.

They were all wearing white gloves, disposable after use.

“I’ll take the evidence with me. If somebody else finds out about this, you know the consequences,” Harvey said calmly and then took Yvonne Xavier and left.

Even after the two had left, George was drenched in cold sweat all over. He was still kneeling on the ground, dared not to move an inch.

‘The man is back!’

‘The man appeared in front of me!’

But he could only pretend not to know. If not, his fate would be worse than death!

Chapter 605

Chapter 605

On the next day.

Harvey York had arrived at the Cloudes' Media Company early in the morning.

Harvey came to the office hall and saw Margie Cloude's giant poster.

Margie on the poster seemed gloriously radiant and charming, as if she were a goddess.

"She's just some family's collateral relative. She was only a little-known on the internet during that time, not bad being able to get this far..."

"But selling out her own boyfriend, heheh..."

Harvey looked at the poster closely and leaked out a smile as cold as ice.

Yvonne Xavier on the side whispered, "CEO, I've set

Chapter 605

an appointment with Margie Cloude beforehand. It's almost our turn.”

“Oh, right,” Harvey said calmly.

Since they were there for Margie, they should play by her rules. He was not in a rush anyway.

Not long after, a receptionist walked over.

“Mr. York, it's your turn. Please come this way...”

At the CEO's office on the highest floor.

A few security guards were stationed at the front door.

After a thorough body search, Harvey and Yvonne went inside the office room.

By the looks of this, Margie was a very careful person.

Inside the CEO's office, Margie was working.

Hearing that someone came in the office, she did not even tilt her head up and said, “Please wait for a

Chapter 605

moment, Mr. York. I'll be done soon!"

At this moment, Harvey said calmly, "Oh Margie, how important you must be."

"Huh?!"

Margie thought that the voice sounded familiar, like she heard it somewhere before.

She slowly raised her head. When she saw who it was, she was utterly shocked.

"Harvey York?!"

They were university mates back then, naturally they would know each other.

But Margie did not know the true identity of Harvey. She only knew that Harvey and William Bell were the same. They seemed to have close ties with the legendary man.

But, she was William's woman back then after all. His death was linked to her in countless ways.

That was why she still had guilt for him, her

Chapter 605

heartbeat spiked a little when she saw Harvey.

Harvey gave a big smile.

“It’s me. We’ve been mates for so many years, why are you still nervous when you see me?”

Margie’s thighs were trembling non-stop.

“What makes you say that?”

Harvey smiled and sat down on a couch in front of Margie.

“I’m just here to see how you’re doing, you’re my good pal’s girlfriend after all...”

“I’m good! But we’re not really that close, I don’t need your greetings. Besides, I’m quite busy today. Please leave now!”

Margie immediately tried to chase him out of her office.

“Why are you so tense? I’m just here to talk about some business with you!” Harvey said casually.

Chapter 605

“What kind of business can you even discuss with me about? You’re just someone’s live-in son-in-law, what sort of prerogative do you have?”

Margie naturally had some information about Harvey, she could not hold in her curiosity.

“Just some business about a short video,” Harvey said with a smile.

Margie frowned in distaste.

“I don’t need some business for any short video! Hurry up and go!”

“Just finish watching the video first before you say anything.”

Harvey chuckled and then threw the phone on the table.

Margie instinctively stood up and picked up the phone.

“What video?”

Chapter 605

When she finished watching the video, her face instantly turned as pale as a ghost.

She slammed the office door shut with a loud bang and then looked closely at Harvey.

“You... Where did you get hold of this footage?”

“That’s only for me to know. As I mentioned before, I’m here to talk business,” Harvey said with a chuckle.

Telegram @chinesenovels

Chapter 606

Chapter 606

“Impossible! This footage is fake! How could I possibly harm William Bell?!”

Margie Cloude immediately denied the accusation.

Harvey York leisurely stood up and said, “Right, I’ll be going then. Don’t regret it!”

“Hold on, tell me what you want?!” Margie immediately asked.

“What’s the point of me admitting that I did do it anyway?”

“You’re no better yourself! You don’t give footage like this to the police, but instead you try to blackmail me with this. You’re not a good person either!”

Naturally, in her eyes, Harvey was already prepared

Chapter 606

to use the footage to threaten and blackmail her. 1

She barely realized that Harvey only wanted to toy with her and let her taste the pain and helplessness that William suffered before he died.

“One price, one hundred and fifty million dollars!” Harvey said with a smirk on his face.

“What? One hundred and fifty million? You are mad! Why don’t you blackmail the Silvas instead?!” Margie screamed furiously.

Harvey chuckled and said, “The Silvas have their means to fix their problem if I upload the video on the internet. Do you think that you do?”

“Who can you even go to? The Cloudes?”

“Do you think the Cloudes would even care about you?”

“I...”

Margie started to panic. Indeed she was only a collateral relative of the Cloudes. Why would they

Chapter 606

even stand up for her?

If the Cloudes do value her, why would she even collaborate with the Silvas back then?

Margie's face had turned a little paler upon realization.

“One hundred and fifty million dollars is too much. I don't have that amount of money!”

Harvey smiled and said, “There's four of you in the video! You're telling me all of you can't accumulate one hundred and fifty million?”

“I'm only giving you one day, you can go talk to your friends about this!

“If I don't see the money tomorrow morning, I'll upload the video.

“Right, the phone's for you. Consider it a souvenir!”

Harvey chuckled, he was hinting at Margie that he had a lot of copies saved. If she could not ante up the money, he could release the video at any time

Chapter 606

he wanted.

“See you tomorrow, beautiful...”

Harvey left the office room on his own.

Puff...

Margie sat down motionless on the couch, with a face full of despair.

Even if she was the CEO of Cloudes Media Company, one hundred and fifty million dollars was impossible for her. It would be too hard for four of them to even take out thirty eight million dollars each.

“This won't work, I have to discuss this with everyone!”

Soon after, she dialed a few numbers.

Those people were the three other individuals standing near her in the footage.

Those three were also good friends of William, but

Chapter 606

they all gained enormous benefits with the incident involving William's death.

Those people were treating William really well, he treated them as reliable friends. But the ones that betrayed him and the ones that sold him out, were them.

Soon after.

The three arrived at Margie's office.

They were all CEOs of their respective companies. They each owned villas and luxury cars. They were worth a fortune.

Even if Margie was the one that called them in, they were still nonchalant about anyway.

In their minds, they already thought of themselves as successful people. If Margie wasn't beautiful and caused them to have suggestive thoughts for her, they would not have shown up just because she called.

"Lady Cloude, it feels like it's been three whole

Chapter 606

years since we met. I didn't think you'd be even more beautiful, not sure why you called us here for?"

Out of the three, the person who was doing his best, Jonathan Maxwell, gave a wide smile while checking out Margie unscrupulously.

Margie snorted coldly and casually threw the phone toward the three.

The three gathered around to take a look. Soon, their carefree attitude had frozen over. 2

Telegram @chinesenovels

Chapter 607

Chapter 607

“Could the footage possibly be fake...?”

Jonathan Maxwell was the first to ask. He found it to be a bit unbelievable since there were quite a number of fabricated incidents as of late.

Margie Cloude frowned and said, “I thought so from the beginning, but I repeatedly checked the footage while I was waiting for you all. It’s definitely real.”

“So, that means once this footage gets out there, we’ll all be exposed?” The most timid one out of the three, Tommy Ray said with a frown at that moment.

The last one named Ted Dunn nodded and said, “It’s not that big of a deal if we get exposed.

“The problem is, if we did get exposed, so will the

Chapter 607

Silvas.

“The Silvas would definitely end us for their family’s reputation. How could you all not know what kind of man Prince Silva actually is?”

Jonathan frowned and said, “What do we do now?”

Margie said helplessly, “That’s why I called you all here. Did you think I’d just invite you for no reason?”

“There’s not many ways of dealing with this. Either we collectively gather one hundred and fifty million dollars and buy the footage, or we all die together!” Tommy spoke after giving a long thought.

In all honesty, they could not find any solutions to the problem at that moment.

“Do we really have no other alternative besides giving the money?” Ted questioned.

Jonathan frowned.

“Guys, this isn’t one hundred and fifty thousand

Chapter 607

dollars we're talking about here. It's one hundred and fifty million. Even if we split the cost between the four of us, are you all willing to give it up?"

"Even if we're unwilling, do we have any other way?" Ted queried.

At that moment, Margie gave a look as cold as ice and said, "Actually, we can't guarantee that he'd delete the footage even if we give the money to Harvey York..."

"Under these circumstances, we might have another solution..."

"What solution?"

Everyone looked at her with confusion.

Women are sly as a snake, no venom could ever surpass their will to kill.

Even though Margie had the looks of a goddess, she was the most ruthless of them all.

She even had motivations to push William Bell to

Chapter 607

his death back then.

“Tell us then, Margie! What do you have in mind?”

Everyone looked at Margie in confusion, they wanted to hear what she would ultimately suggest.

“We meet up with Harvey, then we send him to meet William!”

At that moment, Margie's crude side had shown itself.

The others looked at each other. Then after a while, Tommy frowned and said, “Margie, this is different than before. The only reason why we could cover up William's death was because the Silvas helped us...

“The four of us combined would have some impact, but it would be almost impossible to hide this from everyone...”

Margie laughed coldly, “Let's deal with this problem first, then show the footage to the Silvas. They'll definitely help us...”

The three men looked at each other, then nodded in

Chapter 607

unison.

“You have a point. If we’re able to ask for the Silvas’ help, then all we need to do is just to deal with Harvey.”

Margie nodded.

“We’ll stick to this plan then. So, who’s going to contact the killer?”

Tommy offered, “I’ll do it. I’ve got the resources!”

Jonathan said, “Right, then I’ll get the money with Ted.”

“I’ll be in charge of contacting Harvey and arranging the location of our meeting. That man is a shrewd one, it won’t hurt for me to sacrifice a little,” Margie said as she bit on her bright red lips.

It would be fine to suffer a little. In her eyes, any price would be worth paying if the problem at hand could be solved.

If not, she would be finished once everything was

Chapter 607

exposed!

Compared to this, a little sacrifice meant nothing.

Telegram @chinesenovels

Chapter 608

Chapter 608

Once everything was prepared, Margie Cloude did not anxiously call Harvey York in a hurry. She knew that being hasty would not get her anywhere.

When the time was almost ripe—it was almost ten o'clock, she then gave Harvey a call.

“Mr. York, I’ve prepared the money but these are all in cash. It’s quite inconvenient to bring it around.

“I’ll give you the address of a private club.

Remember, you must bring the original copy of the video here, and you have to promise that there are no other copies!

“If not, I won’t hand you the money!”

Margie sounded like she did not trust Harvey, but that all could be acted out—everything would seem

Chapter 608

more realistic.

Harvey agreed to her terms.

“Sure, wait for me there. I’ll see you in a bit.”

After a moment, Margie sent Harvey the location through her phone.

It was a private clubhouse, she had paid for the whole place at that time. All four of them were present.

Because the chosen place did not have any relations to any of them.

Picking a place like this to handle their business was more convenient for them.

“I’ve organized five killers from a gang, every single one of them are ruthless. I’ll hand them all one hundred and fifty thousand dollars now and then I’ll give the remaining half after the deed is done!” Tommy Ray said.

“Right! Money isn’t that big of a problem!”

Chapter 608

“If we can deal with Harvey, this amount means nothing!”

Margie was a bit anxious while arranging the meeting with Harvey. But even more so, it was overcome by the stronger urge to kill that she felt.

Harvey had arrived at the private clubhouse when it was almost twelve o'clock.

Yvonne Xavier did not tag along with him that day, instead he took Tyson Woods with him. He figured that it would not be suitable for him to bring Yvonne to handle things there.

At the entrance of the clubhouse, Margie was wearing a miniskirt to welcome him. When she saw Harvey along with Tyson, she had shown confusion in her eyes.

She put up a flirtatious face and said, “Harvey, I waited for you for so long. I was getting a little bit impatient.”

Harvey faintly smiled while looking at this woman.

Chapter 608

'Wasn't she a cold person before?

'Did she cast away her dignity just for survival?'

Soon, as Margie led the way, they all came to the innermost box of the clubhouse.

There were a few bottles of beer in the box, the sound of the KTV was quite loud as well.

Tommy and the others were not in the mood to drink, they only anxiously waited.

Their expressions changed slightly as Harvey entered the box.

Harvey walked into the box and sat on the main seat, and Tyson casually sat beside him.

"Where's the money? I thought you said it was all in cash. Where is it? I don't see it," Harvey asked jokingly.

But at that moment, the beautiful and charming Margie slammed the door of the box shut.

Chapter 608

Then, she put on a sly smile and said, “Harvey, you think a worthless sack of trash, a live-in son-in-law like you would be able to get money from our hands?”

“You think you’d survive after taking the money?”

Jonathan Maxwell said coldly, “You’re actually stupid. You just came when she asked you to? Are you really that desperate?”

Tommy and Ted Dunn also showed the coldness in their eyes, they did not even make any effort to hide their intent to kill.

A shame that they were not considered people with a high status; they wanted to thwart Harvey, but they had only made themselves look miserable.

Harvey gave a faint smile and looked at Margie.

“What? Are you going to be unreasonable now?”

“Harvey, hand us the original footage and we’ll spare your life!” Margie softly scolded him.

Chapter 608

In the middle of her speech, five killers wielding watermelon knives walked out from the inner parts of the box. ①

“Harvey, you don’t have to resist. These people are infamous killers in Buckwood, you can’t get out of this alive no matter how many tricks you have up your sleeve!” Tommy threatened him.

Telegram @chinesenovels

Chapter 609

Chapter 609

“That’s right! Give us the original footage, or we’ll break your legs and then we’ll kill you!” Ted Dunn threatened.

Naturally, their own interests were being threatened by this incident, hence why those people were acting as one.

Harvey York’s smile on his face started to turn colder and clapped his hands.

“Not bad, this is interesting. So William Bell was threatened and bribed into submission like this by you people back then?”

“And you’re trying to send me to see him?”

Margie Cloude coldly said, “Harvey, we’re giving you a chance. If we can take out the filth, then we can take you out too!”

Chapter 609

“I’m so scared!” Harvey said mockingly.

“Since I’m so scared, I didn’t bring the original footage here. Instead, I let another person bring it for me, he’s about to arrive.”

“What? You didn’t bring it with you?”

Margie and the others were shocked. They took everything into account, but not the fact that Harvey would not bring the original footage with him.

“Whatever, just kill him for now!”

Tommy Ray wanted the killers to finish the job.

Margie stopped them and said, “Wait, let him bring the footage first!”

Soon, the footage that Harvey was talking about had arrived. George Zabel himself had brought in the footage.

Margie unconsciously reached out her hand to grab

Chapter 609

the original footage after she saw it, but Harvey was one step ahead in doing so.

It was a tiny camera, but it had attracted everyone's attention at that moment.

"I can give you this thing, but aren't you supposed to pay up first?" Harvey smiled and said.

After Jonathan Maxwell had confirmed that this was the original, he could not hold in his cold chuckle.

"Harvey, you're already on death's door. Should you really still care about the money?"

"Do you still not see even until now?"

"Are you still foolish enough to think that we'd give you the money just like that?"

"I'm telling you! We're destroying the footage today!"

"And we're taking your life as well!"

Extremely menacing smiles had appeared on

Chapter 609

Tommy, Jonathan and Ted's faces.

Margie was crossing her arms while proudly looking down at Harvey that was sitting on the couch.

"Harvey, you're no different than William. So foolish and naive!

"People like you should just die! You should be a stepping stone for successful people like us!

"If I wasn't trying to get closer to Prince York before, why would I even be William's girlfriend?

"What right did he have?! Is he even worthy?!

"He never even touched my hand! Damn worthless piece of trash!"

Harvey was still showing a faint smile from the start.

However, after hearing what she said, he slowly tilted his head up.

When Margie and the others saw Harvey's gaze, all

Chapter 609

of their expressions drastically changed.

‘What kind of gaze is that?!’

‘Terrifying!’

‘Truly terrifying!’

At that moment, they could swear that they saw a mountain of corpses on a sea of blood reflected in Harvey’s eyes.

In their heads, they felt like they could hear the cries of countless vengeful spirits struggling.

Harvey’s single gaze could truly kill!

Clap!

After seeing this, Tyson Woods clapped his hands softly.

Slam!

The door of the box was kicked down in an instant, dozens of people rushed into the box.

Even before the handful so-called killers could

Chapter 609

react, all five of them fell and laid on a pool of blood.

While still in shock, before Margie and the others could come to their senses, the people had already surrounded them.

When they came back to their senses, they were all dripping cold sweats down their bodies with their faces as pale as ghosts.

Telegram @chinesenovels

Chapter 610

Chapter 610

“Are you all taking this matter too lightly? You bring in five so-called killers from a gang to kill my CEO? Are you even kidding me?”

Tyson Woods raised his head and stared at Margie Cloude and the others.

A gang boss on his own turf would have a certain bearing.

After he spoke, he sent shivers up the spines of Margie Cloude and the others.

Margie and the others were quivering while shifting their gaze simultaneously toward Tommy Ray .

He was the one that hired the killers, but who knew that they would be finished off this easily?

Tommy then helplessly said, “I relied on so many

Chapter 610

connections to even find the killers from gangs.

Who knew they were this weak?!

“Besides, even if they were strong, how would they even be useful in a situation like this?!”

“You’re the one to blame. I really wanted to just hand the money and be done with it! What are we supposed to do now?!”

Margie looked at the worthless sack of trash that was Tommy and Jonathan Maxwell along with Ted Dunn shivering in fear. She knew that none of them were reliable at that point.

At that moment, she spontaneously revealed her pale white thighs and winked at Tyson.

“Hey handsome, I’ll be sure to pay you back in full if you forget about what happened today.”

Tyson puffed out a breath of air after hearing that.

‘How foolish is this woman? Why is she even trying to seduce me at this point? What kind of stupid joke is this?’

Chapter 610

As Margie looked at Tyson still as steady as a rock, her gaze shifted toward Harvey York and flirtatiously spoke, "Harvey, why would you ruin a good relationship because of something as trivial as this? Don't you only want the money? Now you can have both, the money and me..."

Harvey coldly chuckled.

"I really haven't the faintest idea what William saw in you back then.

"A woman like you couldn't even be worthy to be a strand of hair on his body!"

In the middle of his speech, Harvey's gaze had shifted toward Tommy.

Tyson waited until the right time came, then he reached his hand to choke Tommy's neck.

Margie's whole body was shivering in fear after she saw that display.

"What... What do you guys want?"

Chapter 610

“Your actions will have consequences. You should’ve known that you’d pay for William’s death...”

Harvey said and then gave Tyson a look.

Tyson laughed coldly as he squeezed with his right hand and then abruptly snapped Tommy’s neck moments after.

“Sob... Sob... Sob...”

Tommy was struggling constantly before he died, bloody foams spewed out from his mouth splattered everywhere.

With a push from Tyson, Tommy’s body was pushed onto Margie.

“Ah—”

Margie let out a loud scream. Her whole body and face were covered in blood, she could not help but to shiver uncontrollably.

She was a ruthless woman yet she was scared out of her wits by Harvey’s schemes.

Chapter 610

Not far behind them, Jonathan and Ted immediately kneeled onto the ground. They knew that anything that they said would not have mattered, they could only grovel relentlessly.

Harvey stood up and walked toward Margie, then reached out his right hand to tap on her face softly.

“You get three days. If you come to William’s grave to repent in three days, maybe I’ll think about sparing your lives...

“If not, that’s what’s going to happen to you...”

‘Margie Cloude and her bunch, they will definitely pay for driving my brother to his death.’

However, Harvey needed them to repent in front of William’s grave first.

Harvey had left the clubhouse with his fighters after they had cleaned up the scene.

Margie and the others were still kneeling on the ground, they were all trembling non-stop and their

Chapter 610

souls had left their bodies.

Indeed this was definitely the nightmare that they would not dare to experience in their whole lives.

“What... Do we do now?” Jonathan said while trembling.

Telegram @chinesenovels

Chapter 611

Chapter 611

On the next day.

At the Silva Manor, a coffin was sent to the front entrance and wreathes were decorated around it.

The area around the Silva Manor belonged to the Silvas, that was why nobody else was alarmed.

But the Silvas soon knew.

The Silvas were a traditional and ancient family, things like this were taboo for the family.

Soon after the information was passed down, Leon Silva that was doing his morning practice had gotten the news.

He took a bath leisurely, then dressed in a suit and came to the front entrance.

A throng of people were crowded at the front

Chapter 611

entrance of the Silva Manor at that moment; everyone in the family was showing faces as dark as night, especially the elderly. They had almost fainted in a fit of rage.

But what was inside it? Who even knew about this?

“Who sent this? Does anyone know?”

Leon slightly frowned. He was not scared of things like this, but he still felt that it was ominous.

The most important part was that it had been years, even the Yorks did not provoke the Silvas like this previously.

Where did this person come from? What was he planning to do?

Was he looking for death?

“Prince, the security cameras around us were all destroyed. We’re not sure who sent it.

“But I suspect that it was the agent of that person that sent it, the others don’t have the nerves like

Chapter 611

him to do such a feat,” Brent Silva said while bowing.

Leon frowned and said, “Open the coffin and take a look at what's inside!”

Yet everyone in the family was looking at each other, none dared to step forward.

The coffin was too terrifying after all!

What was in the coffin anyway? What if it was a bomb?

Wouldn't they be dead without ever knowing why?

Brent wanted to go, but he was also afraid. He showed hesitation on his face.

“Bunch of filths!”

Leon snorted coldly, then walked up on his own and kicked the coffin wide open.

“Gasp—”

When the people saw that there was a body inside

Chapter 611

the coffin, they could not even hold in their gasps.

“Who is this man? Why does he look familiar?”

Leon said while frowning after seeing the corpse in the coffin.

Brent cautiously walked up and looked at the body, then his expression changed and said, “Prince, it’s Tommy Ray. He was on our side when we forced William Bell to kill himself back then.”

“What?”

The expressions of other people in the family changed slightly.

The incident had no leads even back then. Nobody even knew about this, but somebody actually brought home the corpse of an accomplice from an incident long ago.

What was going on?

“Back then, William was that person’s right-hand man. This serves as more proof that his agent was the one that did this...”

Chapter 611

“Looks like someone had betrayed us. Get Margie Cloude to tell us what’s going on!”

Leon was calm as he swiftly gave the order.

Not long after, Margie and the others that were still scared out of their wits had arrived at the Silva Manor. They were all trembling constantly as they stood in front of Leon Silva. They would not even dare to look at his face.

“Speak. What happened?”

Leon hinted to them to look at the corpse inside the coffin in the hall.

Margie would not dare to even look. She swiftly narrated the incident that had happened the day before.

“Prince Silva, Harvey York is truly terrifying! He even has gangsters under his command!

“We already hired killers from gangs to deal with him, but it was no use!

Chapter 611

“He wanted us to repent in front of William’s grave. If it weren’t so, the three of us would’ve been dead by now!” Margie said while trembling, it was hard to tell if she was rejoicing or she was feeling grief.

She was a ruthless woman and yet she was still afraid.

That’s because she would only be cunning at most, but Harvey would actually dare to kill.

“You all are lucky, he was most likely the agent for that man. His status is equivalent to William back then...” Leon calmly said.

“What?!”

Margie and the others were shaking even harder.

Chapter 612

Chapter 612

“Seems like the man had made a comeback to exact his revenge for past incidents,” Leon Silva said calmly.

“Then what should we do? Prince, if it really is that man pulling the strings, can we stop him?”

Margie Cloude was trembling non-stop. Despite her not witnessing the man's schemes back then, just the thought of him brought enormous amounts of pressure to her.

If it weren't for three years ago, everyone was spreading rumors about the man causing internal strife and that he was taken care of by the Yorks. Even if she somehow gathered the resolve, she would never even think of betraying William Bell.

William was an agent for that man after all.

Chapter 612

“Filth! How could this filth possibly be the family’s underling?! The family’s honor is all gone!”

Brent Silva looked at Margie full of disdain.

He then walked up toward Leon while bowing and said, “Prince, if I’m not mistaken, Harvey York will most likely use Old Niner’s men, but Old Niner’s capabilities in Buckwood would be mediocre at best. It would be hilarious if he thinks that he can control us with this.”

“There’s still Tyson Woods, is there not?” Leon reminded him.

“Even if there is, what could he do? Prince, we have the top gang boss in all of Buckwood.”

Leon then said calmly, “Summon the top three in all of Buckwood here, let them have their men ready.

“Since Harvey is already provoking us, it might not be long until we actually have to fight.”

Margie and the others heard this and broke out a

Chapter 612

wide grin.

Especially Margie, she was making a flirtatious expression and said, "Prince Silva, you're the only one that deserves the title of prince!

"Just Harvey, some live-in son-in-law, would dare to ask us to repent? Go to hell!"

Brent leisurely said, "Prince, I'm quite excited. I wonder what kind of surprise will Harvey bring us?"

In the middle of his speech, someone walked into the hall and said, "Prince, someone sent a package along with a letter."

"Present it," Leon said in excitement.

A phone was inside the package. When it was switched on, the footage that Margie and the others saw previously started to play along with pictures of related evidence.

After reading the letter, Leon chuckled.

"Harvey invited us to meet at William's grave in

Chapter 612

three days. He even said that if we kneel and repent, he'll let the family go..."

The Silvas all bursted out laughing after hearing that.

Brent also laughed out loud.

"Prince, I'm afraid Harvey hasn't woken up yet! He really thinks that he could do anything he wants toward us just by having Tyson Woods and Old Niner!

"We were hoping that he'd show up too, things did happen exactly how we wanted it to!

"Prince, leave this to me!

"Three days is more than enough for me to handle it!"

"I promise that I'll handle things smoothly. I promise to teach that live-in son-in-law what it means when he overestimates his capabilities!"

Brent was full of confidence, his proud face was

Chapter 612

showing.

‘This live-in son-in-law was already kicked out of the Zimmer family.

‘That would mean that he has no way to use the resources from the Silver Nimbus Enterprise.

‘And relying on a newcomer in Buckwood, Tyson, and a mediocre Old Niner thinking that he could change his fate?’

‘What a joke!’

Brent knew who he was dealing with. He thought maybe they would instantly surrender when they saw the Silvas’ overwhelming power.

If it were to be true, then it would be enjoyable to watch Harvey’s expression after.

“Right, I’ll leave it to you,” Leon said calmly.

“An agent like him does not deserve me dirtying my own hands.”

“Rest assured, Prince!”

Chapter 612

Brent was confident.

“Just enjoy the show when the time comes. I’ll handle the rest.”

Telegram @chinesenovels

Chapter 613

Chapter 613

Harvey York was at home when he gave Yvonne Xavier a phone call. Moments after he hung up the call, Mandy Zimmer called and asked him to fetch her at the construction site as soon as possible.

When Harvey arrived, he was shocked to discover that only Old Niner's men were working.

The staff and construction workers that were under the Silver Nimbus Enterprise were all gone.

Harvey walked toward Mandy and asked, "What's going on here?"

Mandy was perplexed with the situation they're in.

"Sky Corporation called us this morning. They say that they only recognize me as the company's CEO ..."

"I heard that grandfather and the others went into

Chapter 613

a fit of rage after receiving the call. He called off the staff and construction workers as soon as possible.”

“But you’re the CEO, aren’t they supposed to listen to you?” Harvey said with a frown.

“It’s not about that, the staff and construction workers are smart people. The company had been so chaotic as of late, they would not come back to work until the incident had been settled.”

“So tell me, what do we do now?”

Harvey gave a thought about it, he understood what the workers were going through by putting himself in their shoes.

The workers’ fight for authority in the company would always end up killing people without spilling blood.

When the whole family was supporting Mandy before, they naturally would listen to the CEO.

But now Mandy had been kicked out of the family, yet Sky Corporation insisted on her to continue to

Chapter 613

be the CEO of Silver Nimbus Enterprise.

That was why there was conflict between the two parties.

Even more so, word of Harvey's incident of him offending the Silvas had spread all over.

Under those circumstances, how could those ordinary workers not be afraid?

Unless they could completely solve the incident about the Silvas. If not, it would be hard to hire more people even if Mandy was the CEO of the Silver Nimbus Enterprise.

Harvey gave a thought about it, he was not that worried about the situation. When he would take care of the Silvas after two days, the workers would naturally be back.

It wouldn't affect anything anyway even if operations at the construction site would halt for a day or two.

When Mandy saw Harvey not saying a word and

Chapter 613

acting so relaxed, she was a bit furious.

“Harvey, do you realize that you’ve affected me because of your recklessness?”

“Why can’t you just let me be free from my worries?”

“Follow the man you marry, be it a rooster or a dog, but I do hope to live a better life as well.”

Even though Mandy was blaming Harvey, she did not mean for him to leave her.

Harvey smiled at her, after Mandy finished asking a barrage of questions, he then chuckled and said, “Rest assured, I’ll handle the incident about the Silvas. When I’m done, the workers will be back in no time.

“Didn’t Sky Corporation still appoint you as the CEO? With their support, the Zimmers in the Silver Nimbus Enterprise don’t have much say in this matter anyway.

“Once you finish the Silver Nimbus Mountain Resort project, you can prove to them that you’re

Chapter 613

capable!

“Even if you break away from Sky Corporation and the Zimmers later and rebuild a company, we’d still have the money for it too, am I right?”

“With my wife’s capabilities, it would be a bit hard to build a multinational corporation within three years. However, opening a listed company should be easy for you, correct?”

Mandy was shocked by what Harvey said.

Naturally, she did not think that Harvey would still be this confident even at this point.

She let out a sigh and quietly asked, “Harvey, what is it that you are still hiding from me?”

Harvey gave it a thought and then chuckled.

“I’m not hiding anything from you. Didn’t I tell you? I’m Prince York and I can casually deal with some Silva family after two days...”

“Yes yes yes, you’re Prince York...”

Chapter 613

“But my Prince York, we might even lose our lives after two days. We’ll be in the fire together at that point!”

Obviously, Mandy did not believe anything that Harvey had just said. She still thought of it as some sort of a joke. ①

Harvey let out a sigh.

‘I knew nobody would believe me even if I told the truth.’

He gave a thought and said, “Actually, I heard that Prince York is about to deal with the Silvas after two days. So, we might get lucky this time. Once the Silvas are finished, we’ll be fine.”

After hearing this, rejoyce was shown all over Mandy’s pretty face.

“Really?”

“Yep, just wait for my good news.”

Harvey was helpless, nobody would even believe

Chapter 613

him during a time like this not even his own wife.

Telegram @chinesenovels

Chapter 614

Chapter 614

The next day, in the evening.

Tomorrow would be the day to see the outcome of the situation.

Harvey York had ordered a table full of delicious food that night, along with a bottle of Riesling.

Harvey gulped down a cup of wine, then softly said, "Mandy, tell me, are we going to give the Zimmers a chance?"

"Huh?"

Mandy Zimmer froze, she did not know why he would say something like that out of the blue.

"The Silvas would be dealt with tomorrow, and the company would fall right into your hands. You'll be the youngest female CEO in all of Buckwood..."

Chapter 614

“I may be uncomfortable being with the Zimmers, but those people are still your family. I’m thinking that we should give them a chance.

“If they would stand with us against the Silvas, then letting them keep their forty-nine percent of company shares and getting rich together wouldn’t be impossible!”

Mandy was displeased after hearing Harvey putting on airs like that.

She did not think that he would still be immersed in his own world at this point.

‘It’s a shame that all of this would never happen.

‘Firstly, the conflict between Prince York and the Silvas is just Harvey spouting nonsense. Who knows if it is actually true?

‘Secondly, the Zimmers aren’t idiots. Why would they stand against the Silvas for us anyway?

‘The Zimmers were only in Buckwood because of

Chapter 614

the Silvas' help in the first place.'

However, after seeing Harvey being this merry, Mandy did not have the heart to break it to him.

'I'll just let him be.'

If Prince York did not have the Silvas dealt with by the end of tomorrow, the two might even be dead in a ditch somewhere.

If so, it would be better to just be happy on the day before their deaths.

"Right, then you should give the Zimmers a chance."

Mandy smiled.

Harvey gave a call to Senior Zimmer.

"Harvey, what do you think you're doing? The Zimmers are not related to you at all right now!"

Senior Zimmer's cold tone had echoed on the other side of the phone.

Chapter 614

Harvey chuckled and said, “Out of respect for Mandy, I’ll call you my grandfather again!

“I’m giving you one last chance! Tomorrow, the Silvas will be destroyed!

“If you let Mandy back into the Zimmers and stand by us, I promise that the Zimmers can replace the position that the Silvas are in right now in the near future!”

“Are you mad?! Do you have a bump on your head?!” Senior Zimmer was scolding him from the other side of the phone.

“How did we even manage to find a live-in son-in-law like you previously?!

“Screw you!”

Soon, he hung up the call.

Harvey gave a call to Simon Zimmer moments after.

“Harvey, how do you still have the gall to call me?! I

Chapter 614

'm telling you, I'm taking Mandy away tomorrow!

“That’s my daughter, I’m taking responsibility!

“And you can go to hell!

“I heard that you even sent a coffin to provoke the Silvas! You truly are...”

Simon was trembling in a fit of rage on the other side of the phone, he did not think that Harvey would actually be this shameless.

He would dare to do something so brash, even dragging Mandy down the water with him.

Harvey had settled down after Simon had hung up the call.

‘The Zimmers had missed their chance.

‘The time may never come again for an opportunity like this.’

Mandy chuckled while feeling frustrated and helpless.

Chapter 614

‘Of course it would end up this way.

‘How could Harvey even be trusted? The things that he did and the things that he said...

‘Harvey might even be terrified by the Silvas to the point where he would be hysterical...’

Mandy sighed and said, “Right, their biggest regret was to reject your offer. They did not take the chance that we gave them.”

“Hmmm, right. They did.”

Telegram @chinesenovels

Chapter 615

Chapter 615

At night.

Tyson Woods gave Harvey York a phone call.

“CEO, I’ve already contacted the people that you asked me to! They have assembled their men as soon as possible after hearing that the order came from you. Also, they gave me full control of their men.”

“Not bad, just wait for my call,” Harvey ordered.

On the next day.

Harvey came with Mandy to William Bell’s grave early in the morning.

He brought white wine with him and poured it in front of the grave as an offering.

“This is...

Chapter 615

“William Bell, my brother during university...”

Harvey seemed slightly gloomy.

Mandy looked sullen as well.

‘Does Harvey also feel that he’s about to be done by the Silvas?’

‘Is that why he came to visit his friend’s grave?’

Mandy sighed after some thought. It was obvious she had made her decision.

Since she said that she would follow the man that she married before she left with Harvey in the beginning.

Maybe the only thing she could do is to die with Harvey at this point.

‘The Silvas are supposed to take action and take him down soon. Perhaps today is the day?’

Mandy gave a faint smile not saying another word.

Not long after, a Volkswagen swiftly arrived at the

Chapter 615

scene. Simon Zimmer and Lilian Yates were the ones that came out of the car.

Harvey was slightly surprised, he wasn't sure why they came, maybe they had thought it through and wanted to stand by him?

He did not expect that Simon Zimmer and his wife would not even utter a single word and they simply pulled Mandy and shoved her into the car.

Mandy exclaimed, "Father, Mother, what are you two doing?!"

"I just got news! This filth actually wrote a letter to provoke Prince Silva saying that he is about to fight to death with him today!

"The filth overestimating his abilities and looking for his own death does not concern you!

"You can't just die together with him!

"You're our daughter, you have to come with us!"

Simon spoke to the point where he was practically

Chapter 615

screaming. He obviously wasn't doing nothing for the past few days, he at least acquired some intel about this fight.

Lilian held onto Mandy firmly, not letting her out of the car.

Mandy finally knew what Harvey did, and realized why her parents had shown up.

Against Harvey's unstable tendencies, of course her parents would insist on taking her home.

Mandy struggled and said, "Father, Mother, leave me alone! Even if I were to be finished off by the Silvas, it would be my own life to give!

"Harvey, help me! I want to stay with you!"

"He wouldn't dare! If he dares to stop me, I'll go down with him!" Simon said in fury, he would not helplessly watch his own daughter die with the worthless sack of trash.

He was ready for his beautiful daughter to marry another person, and to enjoy glory and riches alike!

Chapter 615

Harvey slightly frowned while coldly looking at Mandy, not taking any action whatsoever.

Finally, Mandy was taken away after a fruitless struggle.

While looking at Harvey standing in front of the grave alone through the car window, Mandy's tears were streaming down her face uncontrollably.

In her mind, the two of them might be separated forever by death.

“Daughter, why are you crying? You should be rejoicing!

“That way, the man bearing bad luck will perish! Then you'll be free!

“If he wants to provoke the Silvas, it's his problem for overestimating his abilities!

“It does not concern us!

“Let's go home and have a rest. I'll take you to a

Chapter 615

blind date tomorrow, they are all rich and handsome young men!” Lilian patiently persuaded her.

Taking Mandy back home was also a part of Senior Zimmer’s calculated plan.

Senior Zimmer had made that decision especially when he found out that Harvey had the courage to provoke the Silvas.

He could not let Mandy die with him, that would drag the Zimmers down the water as well. ①

Sky Corporation would only recognize Mandy as the CEO anyway, that was why the Zimmers could not afford to lose Mandy at this stage.

The best plan would be to wait for the Silvas to finish Harvey off and then add insult to his injury!

Chapter 616

Chapter 616

Mandy Zimmer left afterwards.

Tyson Woods strode forward and moved away from Shawn Bell and his wife, who were both accompanied by bodyguards.

“Sir, why didn’t you let us save your wife?” Tyson asked, unable to understand.

“It’s better for her to leave,” Harvey said. “It wouldn’t be good for her to know my true identity before I destroy the Yorks completely.” ①

“Alright. Also, the people you asked me to find are here as well. They’re waiting for your orders from some distances away...”

“Currently, I have control over all of them. What do you think about...?”

Harvey simply replied, “I’ll leave this little matter

Chapter 616

to you. Just wait for my command.”

Tyson was inwardly gleeful over his master's complete trust.

He said no more and simply nodded before stepping away dutifully, his arms set at his sides.

Around ten minutes later, Old Niner trotted over and spoke respectfully, “Master York, I just got news that the Silvas are now dispatched.”

...

At the same time, in the Silva's mansion.

The whole Silva family was prepared to move out, with Brent Silva in lead.

The family elders were especially enthusiastic.

They felt incredibly disgraced when they received the coffin. Naturally, they would want to lead the rest in their quest for revenge.

Leon Silva was impeccably dressed in a classic suit,

Chapter 616

as he always was. A mysterious smile etched his face as he played with the ring on his thumb from time to time.

Not long after, Brent came over and spoke with respect, "My prince, everything is prepared. We'll immediately deal with that arrogant live-in son-in-law on your command."

"Not bad."

Leon fixed his eyes on the Silver Nimbus Mountain standing not far away.

Early in the morning, he had ordered one of his men to spy on the Yorks.

However, there were no signs of actions from them until now.

It seemed they wouldn't be stepping in this time.

"That's good," Leon murmured. "How can I achieve my goals if they meddle?"

The first step of Leon's plan was to battle against

Chapter 616

that man's representative.

After that, Leon would use him as bait to oppose the Yorks officially.

From what he had seen, everything was going well.

Wait till he kills that live-in son-in-law and throw his body right in front of the Yorks' place! He could enjoy a good show then.

At the same time, Margie Cloude and the other two, Jonathan Maxwell and Ted Dunn, arrived.

As they did not have the right to enter the battlefield, they could only stand aside respectfully. They lowered their heads, but all of them bore wide grins.

No matter how incredible Harvey York was, he wouldn't be able to escape once the Silvas made their move!

Just then, someone trotted over to Leon and bowed. "My prince! One of Buckwood's notable gangsters, Chopper Lyon is here!"

Chapter 616

“Oh? Him? I’ll welcome him myself, then.” Leon’s eyes shone bright for a brief moment. He threw Brent a look of approval, the way Brent settled things was quite efficient.

Chopper Lyon was one of those legendary men in Buckwood.

It was widely known that Chopper had taken control of a large territory with a long knife. He slaughtered people with just one chop, hence his name, Chopper.

He could be considered as the best fighter among the top rankings.

Although he was no longer involved in fighting, he had successfully gathered numerous followers and students, all the while owning a large land himself.

Just as Leon reached the entrance of the mansion, a middle-aged man around forty or fifty years old stepped out of a long Mercedes-Maybach. He wore a black suit, and was gripping on two metal balls.

Chapter 616

He gave off such a dangerous vibe, like a sword that was about to strike at any moment, for it had been a long time since it was used.

This time, Chopper had brought along around ten of his underlings.

They were a collection of all of the best fighters under him, bearing the name the Stallion Battlers. Each and every one bore a threatening appearance.

At this, Leon was all smiles. "I see my brother Chopper has arrived. Thank you for coming."

Telegram @chinesenovels

Chapter 617

Chapter 617

With his honourable title of Prince Silva, naturally Leon Silva was able to possess resources from the underworld.

The difference when he was compared to someone as great as Chopper Lyon, known as the best fighter-gangster in all of Buckwood, was much too great.

The Silvas had deep pockets and great power.

Hence when Brent Silva invited Chopper under Leon's name, Chopper was obviously willing to come.

At that moment, Chopper grinned and said, "Prince Silva. From what you've promised, it doesn't matter if I fight or not. As long as this matter is solved, you'll sell me that land in the southern part of the city."

"Of course." Leon smiled nonchalantly. "I'll offer

Chapter 617

you the best price. After all, we'll be good friends from now on."

That land had high value, but what did it matter if he gave it to Chopper?

To stand on the ceiling of South Light, it was necessary for the Silvas to establish a friendly connection with the best fighter-gangster of Buckwood.

Chopper chuckled. "Alright!"

He instantly understood Leon's hidden meaning. That land, which had the worth of a few million dollars, would be sold at half price as a gift.

He wouldn't mind bringing in some of his underlings today to make the Silvas look good if he could reap a huge profit like this.

After that, rows of cars rolled over and a middle-aged woman walked out of one of them.

"This is the Sinister Fox. He deals with the black market. Although he doesn't have many

Chapter 617

subordinates, every one of them are ferocious killers.”

“This man owns a casino...”

“This...”

It was evident that Chopper was showing his respect to the Silvas by calling in renowned members of Buckwood’s underworld.

Leon remained composed at first, but eventually gave in and started talking with them.

Even if the Silvas had high status and power, it wasn’t easy to be acquainted with so many leaders of the underworld at the same time.

Who knows, maybe this whole mess was actually a blessing in disguise for the Silvas. They might be able to profit from this misfortune!

If the Silvas found a chance to dominate these people and be the king of Buckwood’s underworld, the Yorks would be reduced to nothing!

Right now, so many people had come to Buckwood

Chapter 617

to meet up with a mere live-in son-in-law.

They were incredibly supportive of him...

“Everyone! Seeing how you all came to support me this time, we Silvas won’t be miserly in giving you projects for us to collaborate.” Leon announced with a smile. “It’ll be a win-win situation for all sides!”

“Since you’ve said that, we give Prince Silva our deepest thanks!”

Apart from Chopper who remained cool and composed, the other leaders were overjoyed.

Prince Silva of the Silva family was known to be the man whose status was the closest to Prince York.

It wasn’t easy to contact this man on a normal occurrence. Seeing as the Silvas were the top family in Buckwood, being able to collaborate with them was truly a win-win situation.

This might be the best opportunity for them to board the same boat.

Chapter 617

For the people of the underworld, this was definitely a good thing.

Wealthy and powerful they may be, it remained that their hardest struggle was to clear up their names.

With the Silvas backing them, a few collaborative projects here and there would present an easy way for them to clean up their reputation to the eyes of the public.

After a few brief conversations, Prince Silva glanced at his polished royal watch and chuckled. "Alright, everyone. We can talk more about our future collaborations later tonight to celebrate our success!"

"It's time. Let's set off together!"

Seconds later, car after car drove out of the Silva's courtyard, all of them heading towards a large graveyard.

Chapter 618

Chapter 618

In Silver Nimbus Courtyard, at Silver Nimbus Mountain.

Manager York carefully knocked on the ancient door of the living hall before striding in and moving to stand at Quinton York's side. "Master York, the Silvas have started to move."

Quinton didn't even lift his head and asked emotionlessly, "To fight that man?"

"Yes. I heard he got the video showing what had happened at the Pearl River, and sought payback from Leon Silva."

"And?"

"Not only did the Silvas call in everyone they knew from the underworld, they even used Chopper Lyon to gather nearly half of the hot shots of Buckwood's

Chapter 618

underworld...”

Quinton’s hand, which was holding a chess piece, stopped in mid-air. He smiled to himself. “Leon has probably arranged someone to spy on me. If I happen to make any moves, he wouldn’t have dared to proceed any further.”

“Go find someone to see what went on. I want to know the result as soon as possible.”

“But...” Manager York hesitated.

Quinto frowned. “She went over?”

“Yes, Miss York went out yesterday and never came back. She’s probably already there by now...”

“Let her be.”

Quinton replied coldly, uncaring.

Yet at that moment, everyone in the living hall could feel the temperature drop.

Cold sweat soaked Manager York’s back, and he

Chapter 618

dared not utter another word.

After a while, Quinto spoke up. "You can go now."

"Yes..."

Only after Manager York left did a monstrous expression appear on Quinton's cold face.

Smash!

He threw the jade chessboard onto the ground, letting it crash with a loud noise.

He gritted his teeth. "Fine! You like seeing him that much? Go see him all you want, then! You'll witness how he gets killed with your own eyes!"

"You really thought everything's still the same after three years?! You think he can still turn Buckwood upside down by just stomping the ground?"

"Queenie York, you disappoint me..."

...

Chapter 618

Meanwhile, in the Zimmer's mansion.

The Zimmers received the news as well and were all shivering in fear.

“The best fighter from Buckwood's underworld, Chopper Lyon, is leading the rest of the big shots! Terrifying...” Zack Zimmer couldn't help but shudder.

Senior Zimmer was experienced enough to know how esteemed one had to be to have the power to gather all these big shots from the underworld.

The average people wouldn't even know who these people were, much less seek help from them.

Senior Zimmer inhaled coldly. “My God! This time Harvey York really made a mess!”

“He actually offended the Silvas! Doesn't he know his own place?”

“Fortunately, we drew a line between him and us in time! Otherwise, us Zimmers would be gone for

Chapter 618

good!”

“It was already despicable enough of him to cause a ruckus back in Niumhi. Does he actually think Buckwood is the same as Niumhi?”

“Now that he has offended someone he shouldn't have in the first place, he probably doesn't know that he's going to get killed!”

The Zimmers all bore fearful looks.

Zack couldn't help but snicker. “Grandpa, Harvey doesn't have a brain! Even our family doesn't have the guts to go against the Silvas. How can a mere live-in son-in-law like him fight them?”

“The Silvas are the top among all the first-class families of Buckwood!”

“Did he actually think he can walk and act however he wants just because he has connections with the Naiswells?”

The rest of the Zimmers sneered in unison. In reality, Harvey didn't even contact anyone from the

Chapter 618

Naiswells after he reached Buckwood.

Right at that time, Mandy Zimmer and her family received the news as well.

When Mandy found out there would at least be a thousand fighters from Buckwood's underworld, she started sobbing so hard that her eyes ran out of tears.

A thousand men!

They could easily kill Harvey with one breath!

How would he face that situation?

Chapter 619

Chapter 619

“You can’t go out! Even if Harvey gets beaten to death, you won’t be allowed to go!”

Simon Zimmer and Lilian Yates shot Mandy a stern gaze, not giving her any chance to move.

In the house, only Xynthia Zimmer was able to play with her phone without a worry. She even discreetly sent her brother-in-law a text.

However, Harvey was too busy to bother about it, and that made Xynthia pout in frustration.

...

Harvey had already started reading prayers in front of William Bell’s grave.

Tyson Woods and the others followed suit to show respect, imitating Harvey in praying for William’s

Chapter 619

peace.

Shawn Bell and his wife watched this scene feeling simultaneously tearful and panicky. They tried to persuade Harvey, “Harvey, why don’t we just let it go this time?”

“The Silvas are too powerful! We won't be able to fight them. We're already satisfied with knowing the truth!”

“We've already lost a son, and we can't afford to lose you too!”

Harvey chuckled and reassured them, “Uncle, Auntie. Don't you worry about a thing. I'm not bothered by an insignificant family like the Silvas.”

Tyson and the Old Niner also comforted the elderly couple. “Mr. and Mrs. Bell, no matter who's charging at us, they'd have to kneel obediently when they meet our master!”

Just as they were talking, loud engine noises could be heard from a distance.

Chapter 619

Soon after, rows of cars with bodies as long as snakes appeared in the area.

Fortunately, the graveyard was spacious enough for all of these cars to park.

Shawn ogled at them, utterly astonished.

There weren't a lot of branded cars, and most of them were nanny vans and business cars.

They were the kind of vehicles that could accommodate a large amount of people at once.

It was unimaginable how many were inside them!

The most luxurious car in the lead stopped, and then the Silvas stepped out slowly and patiently.

These people surrounded the mysterious and powerful Leon Silva, their chests puffed up arrogantly.

Their mission today was not only to get rid of this live-in son-in-law.

Chapter 619

It was also to show the citizens of Buckwood the extent of the Silvas' power and connections.

They were also hoping to attract the man behind Harvey and have him fight against the Yorks. The Silvas would be the spectators on the sidelines, before replacing the Yorks and finally stand on the ceiling of South Light!

Now they were acting all high and mighty, looking down on the live-in son-in-law Harvey York.

So what if he's really that man's representative?

The Silvas weren't even that scared of that man, so how could they be afraid of a mere representative?

Tyson didn't react much seeing the underworld hot shots stepping out one by one, his face expressionless.

Old Niner, on the other hand, became paler when he saw them.

“Chopper Lyon, Sister Harriet, the Sinister Fox...”

Chapter 619

Every time their names were brought up, Old Niner trembled.

He knew that Harvey too had power, but the issue was these people were simply too terrifying.

Standing before them, Old Niner could only be referred to as a little brother.

They were the ones who could actually be called the underworld's big shots.

Any one of them could easily get rid of Old Niner.

Even George Zabel, who still managed to maintain his cool a few minutes ago, had a dark look.

He could almost guess who Harvey York was.

It was why he guessed that Harvey wouldn't be terrified even if he were to face the Silvas.

Yet, the Silvas actually managed to gather so many big shots of the underworld here today. George himself couldn't help but shudder.

Chapter 619

That man was indeed powerful, but that was only the case three years ago.

So many events had happened in Buckwood in the last three years. Things weren't the same anymore.

Could that man still suppress these people?

In the case of the Silvas, they were initially surprised to see Tyson, Old Niner and George Zabel standing beside Harvey.

However, they snickered when they noticed the dumbfounded looks on George and Old Niner's faces. It didn't matter if this live-in son-in-law was that man's representative, or if he managed to gain the support of two or three gangster big shots.

The Silvas had Chopper Lyon on their side now!

Standing before Chopper, how worthless could people like Old Niner be?

Chapter 620

Chapter 620

Even if the Old Niner and the rest were terrified, that didn't mean Harvey felt the same.

Right now he stood with his hands behind his back, his aura as dominant as ever.

He never flinched at anyone's appearance, not even once.

Looking at his attitude, the Silvas couldn't suppress their anger.

"Harvey, you don't even realise who you are facing, do you?" Brent Silva snarled.

Seeing that the Silvas' attention was all on him, Harvey only smiled and nodded.

"Did you actually smile? Let's see how you can smile afterwards then!"

Chapter 620

“Those who stood by you are only small fries in front of Chopper Lyon!”

The Silvas cackled.

This man, Harvey York, was truly shameless!

Almost instantly, about ten men appeared behind Chopper, wielding long blades.

“These... they’re Chopper’s underlings, the Stallion Battlers! All of them are skilled killers!”

Seeing them, George Zabel couldn’t help but let out a yelp of fear.

After all, he was a newsmonger. It was only natural that he knew about all these things.

The Stallion Battlers under Chopper were the top killers chosen carefully from the underworld. It wouldn’t be a surprise if each of them could handle three to five men at the same time.

Normally when Chopper had to settle a problem, it

Chapter 620

would quickly be over by just sending some of these battlers out.

For all the Stallion Battlers to be here together was definitely a first!

Apart from the Stallion Battlers, there was a big crowd behind consisting of at least a few hundred men. In addition to the underlings brought by Sister Harriet, there were at least a thousand men with them.

With thousands of men wearing cold sneers gathered at the same place at this very moment, the scene was enough to terrify anyone to death.

Even first class families like the Cloudes and the Naiswells would shudder at this scene.

Among all of the families in Buckwood, only the Yorks who stood on South Light's ceiling could withstand such terror.

The ability to form a group as powerful as this could already be counted as the mightiest show of power

Chapter 620

for the Silvas.

It was why the Silvas were full of confidence. They even had their families' bodyguards, gatekeepers, and the rest of their connections from the underworld all here.

Adding up all of these, there would be another five hundred men.

The total head count would then be around two thousand.

George and the Old Niner felt their legs turning into jelly as they stared at the dramatic formation before them.

There were simply too many people! Would it be possible to fight?

Shawn Bell and his wife were horrified.

Looking at the small group of people before him, Chopper couldn't help but sigh. "Prince Silva, don't you think you're dramatizing the whole situation? You could've simply called fifty men or something.

Chapter 620

Why did you need to have so many men here?”

Leon chuckled. “I apologize if it seemed that way. I, Leon Silva, always do things with extreme caution. Even when a lion fights a rabbit, it uses its full strength. Only then we can prevent the repercussions!”

“Alright, I admire your way of resolving disputes. Then, I’ll play along with Prince Silva today.”

As he spoke, Chopper waved his right arm forward.

The next second, two thousand men charged to the centre in unison.

It wasn’t long before they crammed into the area around William’s grave.

There were at least three long rows of people piling in the graveyard, with another three crowding outside.

A small fly wouldn’t be able to escape this situation, much less a human.

On the other hand, these fighters were all energized

Chapter 620

and fired up. They clutched their knives and steel pipes tightly, their eyes carrying murderous glints.

With just one word from Chopper, they would all charge together and instantly get rid of these good-for-nothings.

Chopper walked up with a smile and said, "Tyson Woods, George Zabel, Old Niner. Seeing as you're all from the underworld as well, I'll forgive you if you kneel before me..."

Telegram @chinesenovels

Chapter 621

Chapter 621

“Get on your knees now!”

“How dare you outright defy us? How dare you try to compete with Brother Lyon when you have such little prowess?!”

“You truly don’t realize where you stand!”

Sister Harriet and the Sinister Fox sneered.

From their point of view, Harvey and his men were ungrateful wretches who sought death.

Unexpectedly, George Zabel and Old Niner exchanged glances. Both their eyes fell on Chopper Lyon at the same time. “Brother Lyon, we recognize that you are the master of the streets of Buckwood most of the time. Of course, we respect you!”

“However, we serve a different master today. I’m

Chapter 621

afraid we'll have to fight against each other!"

"Yes. We don't have time to catch up today!"

"It seems that you're willing to die to protect this live-in son-in-law." Chopper Lyon said mockingly.

"I don't know what benefits he gives you to make you work so hard!"

George sighed and said, "Brother Lyon, I'm giving you a chance for old times' sake."

"You of all people should know what I do!"

"Do you think I'd randomly address anyone as my master?!"

"You'll never guess who you're dealing with today!"

"Hahaha...!"

The whole crowd burst into laughter after hearing what George had said.

"George, just because you opened a private detective agency, doesn't mean you can make up

Chapter 621

stories!”

“We already know that he’s just a live-in son-in-law!”

“At best, he’s just someone else’s errand boy. He’s the kind that can be sacrificed any time!”

“Do you actually think you’ve latched on someone rich and powerful?!”

Chopper Lyon and the rest of the underworld gang leaders taunted George cruelly.

From their perspective, George’s words were the funniest joke they had ever heard.

“Hahaha...!”

This time, it was George and Old Niner who sneered.

Chopper Lyon and others watched the two laugh, perplexed.

“You won’t understand at all. You could’ve never imagined his true identity!”

Chapter 621

“His presence is what you should all look up to!”

George exclaimed loudly.

Unfortunately, as soon as these words escaped his lips, the gangsters resumed mocking him.

They had already heard of Harvey York. He was just a live-in son-in-law who had been recently driven out of the Zimmer family.

Even if Harvey did manage to latch onto someone rich and powerful, it had been barely a week...

How many forces could he bring together in such a short period?

Yet, to go so far as to demand them to look up to Harvey?

What a joke! George must be dreaming! Look properly, the sun was still up!

Leon Silva, who was standing far at the back, frowned slightly as he gradually understood the

Chapter 621

meaning of George's words.

It seemed that his previous speculation about Harvey was correct.

Harvey was most probably that man's right hand, and should have gained a certain degree of trust.

Well, so what?

That man was not coming in person! Harvey was just a representative. He was nothing!

To be so arrogant in front of Leon and his men, what was Harvey thinking?

The current South Light was no longer like how it was in the past, where it would shake whenever that man stomped his feet even only slightly.

Three years had passed. The times had changed! ①

Leon Silva analyzed the situation carefully as he played with his jade ring.

From his point of view, no matter how arrogant and

Chapter 621

capable Harvey was, death was final!

Nonetheless, he did not voice out his thoughts.

They may be standing on the Silva family's turf today, but he was the legendary Prince Silva. He couldn't be bothered to exchange nonsensical words with a nobody.

Meanwhile, Harvey took a step forward and casually waved his hand. Instantly, both George and Old Niner kept their mouths shut and stood straight with their hands down.

Harvey squinted and scrutinized Chopper Lyon carefully. After a while, he smiled and said, "Chopper Lyon? The leader of the streets who just moved up in the past two years?"

"Nonsense! How dare a live-in son-in-law like you address Brother Lyon directly by his name!"

Brent Silva roared furiously from behind.

Chapter 622

Chapter 622

“Yes! Worthless trash like you have no right to talk to Brother Lyon!”

“You’re just a live-in son-in-law, stop being pretentious! Who do you think you are?!”

“If you quickly kneel and beg for mercy, we’d at least leave your body unscathed!”

The gangsters shouted, glaring at Harvey York furiously.

This live-in son-in-law was too arrogant!

Such a person must be killed immediately so that he’ll know why flowers are red!

Harvey grinned, looked in Leon Silva’s direction, and said indifferently, “The Silva family. One of the first-class families in Buckwood, although in the

Chapter 622

past their strength was only at an average level among the first-class families...”

“Still, recently everyone’s saying that the Silva family is the top out of all the first-class families in Buckwood.”

“I initially thought the Silvas were just talking big, or managed to luck out by clinging to an influential party...”

“But it seems that the Silva family did have some prowess.” Harvey lamented. “In terms of connections or foundation, they’re much stronger than I anticipated.”

Harvey initially thought the Silvas only amounted to Quinton York’s dog.

It seemed that this first-class family was indeed a first-class family, for they truly had the ability to back up their reputation.

While Leon Silva had the audacity to address himself as the prince, the spectacle that he cooked

Chapter 622

up right now showed clearly that he truly was quite powerful.

“Hahahaha...! Do you know how formidable the Silva family is?”

“Harvey, you’re just a live-in son-in-law. How dare you challenge the Silvas?”

“I’m warning you! If you kneel now, we might still spare your life!”

“You don’t have any skills. How dare you provoke the Silva family! You’re even acting as if you’re here for revenge! Isn’t it just a friend who died? Did you really have to come to us and get yourself killed?”

The Silvas sneered.

Harvey tilted his head and looked at them as though they were clowns. He then sneered, “I gave you three days to get ready. It implies that whatever you have prepared, I won’t be afraid...”

“You’re all so stupid. Haven’t you figured out the problem?”

Chapter 622

“That is, the reason I have the fortitude to mess with you Silvas?”

The Silvas were taken aback upon hearing these words.

A moment later, Brent Silva sneered. “Fortitude? Aren’t you just that man’s representative?”

“Do you think the Silva family is that useless? Do you think we won’t find that out?”

“You and William Bell were classmates. Back then, William was that man’s proxy!”

“It’s said that man has returned to Buckwood recently.”

“You probably took advantage of your past relationship with William and latched on to that man to take revenge for William, am I right?”

“You know what? A live-in son-in-law like you might not have any skills worth bragging about, but you’re still pretty good at sucking people up!”

Chapter 622

“I heard that your wife is that man’s secret lover. I didn’t believe it before, but now, I do!”

“Didn’t you realize that your wife has been unfaithful to you?”

The whole crowd burst into laughter at Brent’s words.

“Young Master Silva, do you think he doesn’t know? He’s neither blind nor deaf!”

“What does it matter if he does? He can only hold tight to his green hat and watch his wife cheat on him! He’s even afraid of losing the privilege!”

“If it weren’t for his wife, how could he be that person’s representative? No way!”

“That man has so many talented subordinates. Some guy who sells his wife out to get ahead, and yet he thinks he’s so amazing? What’s wrong with him? Maybe he hasn’t even seen that person’s face yet!”

“Who do you think you are? A proxy?”

Chapter 622

“Look at Manager York from the Yorks! That’s a genuine proxy. He’s a man of his words. You’re nothing!”

Harvey remained expressionless despite their ridicule. Instead, his eyes fell on Leon. He smiled and said, “Leon, you are known to be the closest to that man. I’m sure you must have some worthwhile skills.”

“Then... do you think I have enough fortitude?”

Telegram @chinesenovels

Chapter 623

Chapter 623

At this moment, Leon Silva's face, initially indifferent, changed slightly.

Since arriving here, he had been secretly observing Harvey York.

He felt that it was an anomaly that this live-in son-in-law was acting a little too arrogant. Yet, he couldn't pinpoint exactly how Harvey was abnormal.

Since Harvey was willing to give away his wife in exchange for huge power...

Didn't he realize there was no way for him to crush the Silvas just by relying on people like George Zabel, Old Niner, and Tyson Woods?

That being the case, why was he bold enough to provoke the Silvas?

Chapter 623

Right now, the hot shots of Buckwood's streets were all gathered here, with the exception of a few older generations who had already retired.

Why was this live-in son-in-law still so arrogant despite the fact he was currently surrounded by more than seventy percent of the gangster leaders?

Did that mean he had enough confidence to face all of them?

What was this confidence?

Leon knew how capable Old Niner and George were.

Then, it would seem that Tyson might be the odd variable.

However, Tyson was a powerful outsider who just came to Buckwood recently. He didn't seem to be the uncertainty Leon suspected.

In the end, Leon's gaze passed Harvey and fell on several people behind him.

Four men were standing there with their heads

Chapter 623

down, all of them wearing suits. Their faces couldn't be seen clearly.

They were very respectful toward Harvey, and seemed to be completely indifferent to the other people around them.

Could it be that these four strangers were Harvey's genuine trump cards?

Nonetheless, even if these four people were the top leading gangsters and the greatest fighters on the streets, there were only four of them. How could it be possible for them to beat the many people present here?

Leon was still pondering.

However, Brent did not think as much as him. Instead, Brent glared at Harvey and sneered, "You bastard! When I asked you to divorce your wife, you tried to act so cool!"

"In the end, you still used her to get ahead!"

"A cuckold like you isn't worthy to live in this

Chapter 623

world!”

Harvey flashed Brent a half smile.

No man would be happy being called a cuckold.

Yet based on the rumors, Prince York had made a cuckold of him.

That was, he made a cuckold out of himself...

Harvey couldn't get angry at the rumors even if he wanted to, since it was all too funny to him.

Brent continued, “To be honest, do you think I like Mandy?”

“The reason I fell for her that day was simply because I thought she was an easy woman!”

“I'll dump her right after I have my way with her ...!”

“You! What's the difference in letting me have your woman than someone else?”

“You're still the cuckold anyway, right?”

Chapter 623

“You’re just a live-in son-in-law, but you have the guts to boss around and act cold. You think you’re worthy? You dare!”

Brent cursed, and the rest of the Silvas present also cursed in unison.

“Harvey, do you still want to bring down us Silvas? What nonsense!”

“You think that’s possible just by depending on George Zabel and Old Niner?”

“In our opinion, they’re worthless!”

Harvey smiled again. “You Silvas address yourselves as royal nobles, yet why are you all so foolish?”

“Up to this point, do you still think that George and Old Niner are my backers?”

“Even if God gave them courage, dare they consider themselves my supporters?”

“Sir, we dare not!”

Chapter 623

Both George and Old Niner instantly kneeled, panic coloring their faces.

Everyone watched the scene with renewed astonishment.

It took them a split second to react. Were these two gangster bosses actually terrified of Harvey?

Telegram @chinesenovels

Chapter 624

Chapter 624

Could it be that Harvey still had another ace in his sleeve?!

Leon Silva gradually figured out something horrifying...

Harvey York turned to Margie Cloude and said coldly, "Have you no remorse for William when you came to his grave? Don't you think that William is looking at you from the heavens?"

In truth, Margie felt a little guilty at the moment.

Yet, she raised her head arrogantly, like a peacock. "Hmph! It's great that he's dead! If he didn't die, can I enjoy a life of luxury I have today? He should be thankful!"

"As a rebound guy, he's lucky he could do something for his goddess!"

Chapter 624

Harvey continued coldly, “So you don’t have the slightest intention of remorse?”

“Of course!”

Harvey turned back to the Silvas. “What about all of you? Are you willing to kneel in front of William's grave and confess your sins?”

“Tut! One is a cuckold, and the other is a cuckold who’s dead. So, what should we confess?”

The Silvas commented snidely, calling Harvey and the late William cuckolds.

Shawn Bell and his wife were in great pain. Their son died tragically, and yet he was being insulted as a cuckold.

To top it off, the woman who got him killed was now enjoying the splendor, prosperity, and wealth that came as a result of his death.

Was this fair?

It wasn’t fair at all!

Chapter 624

Brent fell in a fit of anger and howled, "Brother Lyon, please get rid of him! Whenever I see this live-in son-in-law, I get so annoyed!"

Chopper Lyon nodded. "Okay. I'm going to do that, anyway."

"I don't want to see them still standing!"

Following Chopper Lyon's order, the crowd of gangsters rushed forward.

Yet right at that very moment, the sound of roaring car engines came from outside and grabbed their attention.

They grew stunned when they saw many thugs in black suits exiting out of some arriving cars.

One could tell that these thugs had been specially trained at first glance, and that they were incomparable to ordinary punks.

They carried an aggressive, murderous air, hinting that they were once soldiers on a bloody battlefield.

Chapter 624

The gangsters under Chopper's command were shocked by the momentum of this newly arrived group and instantly halted their movements.

Chopper Lyon glanced at the back. He frowned slightly and said, "Prince Silva is truly capable. Even right now, there are still more people coming? I truly admire your strong network!"

However, Leon and Brent only exchanged puzzled glances, unsure of what was going on.

They had already used up all the connections that they had and called every person they could think of.

Why were there still people coming in?

Leon lost his cool and hurriedly asked, "Brother Lyon, didn't you invite them?"

Chopper Lyon smiled. "You must be joking, Prince Silva. I can't have invited them."

"After all, my men are already here!"

Chapter 624

“That’s odd. Then, who are they here for? This isn’t good...”

In the next second, they came to a realization. Their eyes quickly fell on Harvey.

He was so calm. He must have called these newcomers here.

“These people are...!”

Chopper Lyon’s face suddenly changed when he saw them walking out of the cars.

“Master Caesar, Tony Jack, Sean Bill...!”

“Didn’t they already retire and went into seclusion? Why are they here now?!”

Chopper Lyon knew them.

They were infamous figures on the streets of Buckwood from three years ago.

They were even rumored to have a close relationship with the legendary Prince York!

Chapter 624

However, they had remained very low-key in the past three years.

Some even got a clean slate and exited the gangster business.

Otherwise, the rise of Chopper Lyon would not be possible...

Nonetheless, they suddenly appeared today. What could this mean?

Telegram @chinesenovels

Chapter 625

Chapter 625

“What?!”

Upon hearing these names, every single person there looked as though they had been struck by lightning.

The Silvas were especially bewildered, and their faces changed drastically.

They weren't ignorant. They too knew what these famous figures represented three years ago.

It wouldn't be that big of a deal if they came by themselves. The pressing matter was, they had also brought along a large crowd of followers with them.

Back then, these men were renowned fighters. Although they had retired from the streets for many years, they were still very influential and popular. They still had unimaginable prestige in the

Chapter 625

streets of Buckwood.

In the face of these former gangster bosses, Brother Lyon was just an insignificant underling.

Chopper Lyon thought that he was about to go crazy right now.

Why were these people here?

Although he was now known as the top leading gangster on Buckwood's streets, these men could crush him easily.

Just one sentence, and he would be torn into pieces!

In the streets, strength was most important. Those with the greatest strength had the final say.

This scene right now was a live interpretation of that belief.

As of now, Chopper Lyon was not the only one afraid. Even Sister Harriet and the Sinister Fox were trembling in their boots.

They had no choice. Who wouldn't be terrified?

Chapter 625

When these gangster bosses ruled the streets in the past, they were just little punks!

As for the Silvas, their faces turned pale when they saw these former leaders of Buckwood's underworld. For a while, they were numbed into speechlessness.

Those timid ones were already trembling.

The Silva family couldn't have invited these men. They had no clue why these gangster bosses were here in the first place!

Amid all this, Leon was still calm.

He soon noticed that these gangster bosses; Master Caesar, Tony Jack, and Sean Bill, had a white flower pinned on the lapels of their sleek black suits.

Apparently, they came to pay respects to William Bell.

Upon this discovery, the always calm and strategic Prince Silva felt that his head was about to explode

Chapter 625

in any second.

His perception of Harvey immediately took a different turn.

Who the hell was Harvey?!

Even these former gangster bosses, the ancestral figures, came to attend William's memorial service!

Master Caesar and the others walked out of the encirclement. Sean Bill frowned and yelled, "Get out of the way!"

The rest of the gangsters shuddered in fear and tacitly gave way to them.

They were all sweating right now, staring at the three bosses passing by in shock.

Leon and Chopper Lyon glanced at each other. For now, they had to force themselves to walk forward and say their greetings.

Unfortunately, Sean Bill couldn't be bothered with them. Instead, he spat coldly, "A good dog doesn't

Chapter 625

get in the way. Scram!”

Chopper Lyon was instantly frightened. He was Sean Bill’s follower back then. Although he did start up his gang afterwards, he was still nothing in front of Sean!

The Silvas, meanwhile, didn’t dare step forward.

These gangster bosses who used to be on the streets not only had commendable prowess, but also became popular in the business industry after they whitewashed their reputations.

The Silva family might not be afraid of such people, but they dared not provoke them.

Several of the Silvas exchanged uncertain looks. At this point, they didn’t know what to do.

Leon took a deep breath and regained his composure. He then waved his hand harshly, motioning the Silva family to make way.

His lips pulled into a frown as he watched the events unfold.

Chapter 625

The Silvas looked at each other once more. They could only back off obediently, and some were even fearful. The more timid ones were trembling violently, close to fainting.

Telegram @chinesenovels

Chapter 626

Chapter 626

When they arrived at William Bell's grave, they first greeted Harvey with a nod before honoring William Bell. Then, they approached Shawn Bell and his wife, and expressed their sincere condolences.

Before, Shawn Bell had no idea who they were.

However, he had lived in the slum village for three years. Thus, he knew what the thugs on the streets were like, as well as the identities of these newcomers.

Right then, he burst into tears and said, "William, are you seeing this? The big shots of Buckwood's underworld came to offer you incense!"

The elderly couple began to cry. Although this was an honor, their son was already dead. He had been dead for three years.

Chapter 626

The dead couldn't be brought back to life. Even if this was a splendid memorial service, what did it matter?

Seeing the former gangster bosses like Master Caesar offering William incense, Chopper Lyon and the rest of the gangster's blood ran cold.

They felt as though they had fallen into an ice cave for thousands of years.

They began to understand why people like George Zabel and Old Niner would work for Harvey York...

Doubly so for a shrewd man like George Zabel, who handled sensitive information.

Despite his nature, he chose to join Harvey's side immediately. It seemed he had known this live-in son-in-law's true prowess a long time ago.

Margie Cloude, Ted Dunn, and Jonathan Maxwell saw the ancestral figures offering incense for William in turn. For a brief moment, they didn't know what to feel.

Chapter 626

They had no inkling what awaited them next.

“I...”

Brent Silva’s body was trembling over, and it was difficult for him to utter a word.

The other Silvas had lost their arrogance and pride. Their minds were a complete mess.

“This...”

Leon frowned slightly. He was so surprised, he was at loss of what to say.

What was Harvey’s identity now?

Why did a prominent figure like Master Caesar come here?

Something like this couldn’t be done with mere connections!

Countless questions filled the heads of the Silvas.

After Master Caesar and the others finished offering

Chapter 626

incense, they didn't stay for too long. Instead, they turned and left.

However, none of them approached Chopper Lyon and others during the time they stayed.

This scene confused everyone. ①

What the hell was going on? They even brought so many people here!

Suddenly, Brent burst out into laughter. "Now, I understand! Master Caesar and the others came to this memorial service for that man's sake. William Bell was that man's proxy, after all!"

"Moreover, they've already retired and gone into seclusion. Why would they violate the rule of the streets?"

"Coming here to pay homage to William was already giving face to that man!"

"Even if that man returns, he wouldn't dare say anything about them, right?"

The previously quiet Silvas burst into loud musings.

Chapter 626

“If the big shots of the streets of Buckwood like Master Caesar are Harvey’s trump cards, why didn’t they deal with us before they leave?”

“Yeah, they’re just here for that man’s sake!”

Chopper Lyon frowned and said, “Prince Silva, we may need to consider these old people’s feelings. We definitely can’t make a move on Shawn Bell and his wife. We also shouldn’t touch William’s grave!”

“Of course, as for other people, we can do whatever we want...”

Leon nodded. “Alright!”

Then, his gaze fell on Harvey once more.

Harvey actually dared to cause such a big scene, and Leon was entirely out of line from sheer fear!

Just for this, Harvey must die!

“You’re not just going to die today! You’ll have to kneel before me to die!” Leon spat icily.

Chapter 627

Chapter 627

The changes in Leon Silva's eyes snapped Chopper Lyon into regaining his senses. He waved his hand fiercely, and all of his subordinates immediately recovered from fear and turned to Harvey viciously.

Meanwhile, Harvey York glanced at Tyson Woods indifferently. Tyson quickly leaned over with his hands down.

Behind Harvey, the four men from before continued standing with their heads down. Upon Tyson's cue, they all stepped forward.

"You can start now," Harvey said nonchalantly. Although his tone was casual, for Tyson it sounded like an imperial decree.

"Yes!"

Tyson didn't talk nonsense. He took out his phone

Chapter 627

and quickly dialed a number. “Get ready to take action!”

Seeing the Silvas on the opposite side looking dazed, Harvey shrugged and said, “Sorry to keep you all waiting. Now, let today’s show begin!”

“Harvey!” Brent shouted. “What tricks are you trying to pull, you b*stard?”

“What else can you do besides faking?”

“You’re just a live-in son-in-law! How dare you act so arrogantly in front of the Silva family again and again? You’re nothing!”

Boom!

Just then, fireworks were launched into the air. Although it was daytime, it was still dazzling.

The Silvas were at loss for words when they saw the fireworks explode.

Even Sister Harriet, the Sinister Fox, and the rest of the gangsters were a little confused. What the hell

Chapter 627

was going on?

Who could understand what these fireworks implied?

However, Chopper Lyon's face changed. He suddenly remembered an infamous legend on the streets!

Doubly so when he saw the launched fireworks. The corners of his eyes kept twitching.

"The situation doesn't seem right, Prince Silva. We have to retreat as soon as possible!" Chopper Lyon said to Leon. He couldn't be sure if it was really the person of legend lingering in his mind.

"Retreat? Now, we have reached a point of no return. If we retreat without knowing what the situation is, how can the Silva family gain a foothold in Buckwood in the future?"

Leon replied coldly.

While he also felt that the fireworks were very inappropriate, he didn't dare let his people retreat

Chapter 627

just like that.

The Silvas had made their move with great fanfare, with a purpose in mind.

On one hand, they intended to cause a crack in the relationship between Prince York and the York family. On the other hand, they also wanted to show the prowess and value of the Silva family to the people behind the scenes.

If they were to retreat and suffer defeat by a live-in son-in-law without a fight, they would certainly suffer in the future!

“In that case, I don’t want that land...!”

“Prince Silva, be careful...” Chopper Lyon’s face changed again and again. He wanted to take his men and quickly leave, as he felt that everything didn’t seem right.

Part of the reason he was able to become the big boss on the streets of Buckwood was due to his accurate instincts.

Chapter 627

At this moment, he felt that if he didn't leave, his status as the big boss of Buckwood's underworld would probably be over.

There's no need to sacrifice your life for just a little money, right?

Rumble...

Just as they were about to retreat, there was a sudden earth-shattering movement from all directions. Many were shaken until they fainted.

Everyone saw that the sand and stones under their feet began to tremble constantly. Some people were unable to stand firmly under such shaking.

It was as if an earthquake was happening right this very moment.

Chopper Lyon's face changed again. He finally remembered the legend!

The army! The people from the army had come!

According to rumors, Country H's military had

Chapter 627

never been involved in the disputes on the streets. They wouldn't bat an eye to the scuffles that happened among the thugs.

But if one broke the rules, then the army would be dispatched and kill all in one fell swoop!

While the street thugs had dauntless courage, what they feared most were those in the army!

Telegram @chinesenovels

Chapter 628

Chapter 628

Boom, boom, boom...!

At this moment, the sound of the earth-shaking gradually became louder.

Soon, everyone knew where the sound came from.

Ten helicopter gunships came flying over the ground at low altitudes.

Although there were only ten of them, firearms flashed with faint murderous intent under each armed helicopter.

The sound of the earth's shaking grew louder and louder.

Many became a little unsteady on their feet.

“Look!”

A thug shouted, forcing everyone immediately

Chapter 628

looked behind.

At the end of their line of sight, a black behemoth appeared, directly crushing their initially good cars into small iron pieces.

Everyone's face turned pale as soon as they saw the iron beast clearly.

An armored vehicle!

It was believed to be an iconic configuration of the army, and only the most elite troops were equipped with it. Now, it actually appeared here.

Many figures were standing on the armed armored vehicle. Each of them held large blades and stood with their backs as straight as a javelin.

They weren't many of them, yet they still brought overwhelming pressure to these punks.

"This is the military, real military men..."

Chopper Lyon and others felt that their heads were about to explode.

Chapter 628

This was surely not the level they could reach, nor could they contend against!

What could they do in the face of such overwhelming strength?

There might not be many people at the other party, estimated to be only a few hundred people. It was just a little compared to what the gangsters had.

Be that as it may, for these few hundred men, killing the two thousand thugs present was as easy as drinking water.

They didn't even dare to fight in the face of such a high level of skill.

No matter how powerful the gangster boss was, he would have to instantly kneel on the ground when he encountered the army.

'Why are we here?'

'We just want to live our lives. Can't we do that?'

These bosses from the streets kept asking

Chapter 628

themselves. Some of the punks were so scared that they peed directly. The smell of their urine rose to the sky.

They just came for a brawl.

Was it necessary to dispatch helicopter gunships and armored vehicles?

There weren't too many soldiers, but they were still casually and easily dwarfed by these soldiers.

When the people from the Silva family watched the scene in front of them, a chill ran up throughout their bodies, freezing them.

It's too scary!

How come the army suddenly appeared?

What's going on?

Leon Silva's face had become incredibly dark.

Although there were many people under the Silvas' command, this was the army they're dealing with!

An ordinary family couldn't fight against such men

Chapter 628

...

“Everyone, do you think it’s a military exercise... This place is very empty and seems to be suitable...”
Chopper Lyon suggested quietly.

He, the number one guy on the streets of Buckwood, could still remain somewhat calm at this moment. He forced himself to stay composed.

Leon took a deep breath and said, “I think so too! He’s just a live-in son-in-law. How could he get involved with the military?”

“Even for the Silvas, known as the top among the first-class families in South Light, has no right to cross paths with the military.”

“They are certainly in a completely different world ...”

“It seems that this time it’s really a military exercise. Our luck’s just rotten, and we happened to be in their way...”

Leon spoke slowly, as if he was comforting Chopper

Chapter 628

Lyon and himself.

“No, it shouldn’t be a military exercise...” A member of the Silva family who had been in the military for two years intervened softly. “For military exercises, the place is generally notified in advance to allow citizens to retreat...”

“However, I just checked. There is no announcement regarding the military exercise recently...”

“Sss...”

Everyone gasped, their faces extremely pale.

Chapter 629

Chapter 629

Everyone panicked.

Rumble...

The huge armored vehicle stopped about five hundred meters away from the crowd.

The sergeants on the armored vehicles all stepped forward and walked down to the ground, moving forward like a raging flood.

There weren't many of them, only a few hundred.

However, when they walked out, their aura was too overwhelming!

Clank, clank, clank...

The long and narrow blades lightly scraped on the ground, sparking small blazes.

Chopper Lyon looked at the scene in despair.

Chapter 629

“This is...the Sword Camp in the army! It is said to be one of the strongest combat forces in the army. Although the number of people has always been less than a thousand, it is rumored that this army used to fight on the battlefield of Central Asia. At that time, their strategy was pit one against a thousand. In the end, they defeated the opponent's millions of soldiers with just a thousand of them.”

“Is the Sword Camp out in full force?”

Chopper Lyon murmured. He was in despair when he talked about this legend.

Many times, in wars, numbers were not the key to victory.

The main key lay in the individual combat power of these sergeants and also their teamwork!

As for the Sword Camp, although they numbered only up to a thousand, it was believed that every sergeant who could enter the Sword Camp was one in ten thousand.

Chapter 629

What could he and his men here do against such oppressive combat power?

Even if there were only dozens of the Sword Camp soldiers, getting rid of these punks was as easy as drinking water for them. Don't mention the Sword Camp that was out in full force now!

The Silvas weren't ignorant. Sure enough, they had heard about the Sword Camp before.

All of them fell into despair when they heard these words.

The Sword Camp!

The mythical, legendary army!

Why did they appear here?

“I, I, I, I...”

Brent Silva was so scared that his teeth were chattering, and couldn't speak for a long time.

“Prin...Princ...Prince...”

Chapter 629

He was trembling, and he couldn't think.

At this moment, these sergeants from the Sword Camp stopped at a place less than ten meters away from everyone, almost reaching the distance of interfacing of the short knives.

Meanwhile, the sergeants didn't speak any nonsense. Instead, they held their blades with stern expressions. The metal of their sharp blades glinted with cold light.

There was no doubt that they would be able to put all these punks and the Silva family down in an instant if they wished to.

These little gangsters were nothing in front of real sergeants.

Just rubbish!

Seeing these sergeants, the gangsters looked at each other. After a while, a crackling sound was being heard. All these people dropped their weapons and raised their hands.

Chapter 629

The gangsters were all feeling hopeless. Some were even ready to kneel.

All the gangsters were regretful. Why didn't they study hard in the first place and enter society like a good citizen?

Although street thugs were often regarded as cool by the common folk, they were nothing in the face of absolute power, the military!

The iron ball that Chopper Lyon had been turning in his hand dropped to the ground the moment he saw the army advancing nearer.

Sister Harriet's face turned pale, so much that the foundation on her face faded...

As for the Sinister Fox, his blood sugar instantly dropped. If there wasn't someone who was holding him, he would have fallen to the ground and melted like a puddle of mud.

All the warriors, the so-called elite of Chopper Lyon's men, turned pale. They didn't dare to lift their

Chapter 629

heads. As for their knives, those had long been thrown to the ground.

Leon's expression was extremely awful. As long as the people from the Sword Camp took a step forward, the blades would be placed on their necks.

Even if he was known as the Prince, that he was the man closest to Prince York in terms of strength, he was at a loss while facing a situation like this.

Telegram @chinesenovels

Chapter 630

Chapter 630

Just when Leon Silva was trying to think of what to do, he saw that the helicopter gunships mid-air suddenly stopped moving.

They activated the levitation mode and hovered silently mid-air.

The firearms turned its muzzle and aimed at the crowd below.

This scene put more pressure on them than the sergeants from the Sword Camp.

This was simply from the sky to the ground and vice versa. There was no way out!

It was terrible!

This scene was too horrifying!

At this moment, Sister Harriet was the first one

Chapter 630

who couldn't bear the pressure!

Pow! She kneeled on the ground and raised her hands. She then exclaimed, "We're being tricked by the Silva family into coming here. We didn't do anything!"

Along with her movements, many gangster bosses on the streets soon followed suit and kneeled.

Immediately afterward, Chopper Lyon also pointed at Leon and cursed, "All these were done by the Silva family! They used a piece of land to lure us into doing things!"

"We're being blinded by greed! We truly don't know!"

"Dear sergeants, we're wrong! We're wrong!"

As soon as Chopper Lyon finished his words, he didn't hesitate to kneel on the ground and raised his hands in surrender.

Just as the saying goes, "A leader can submit or can stand tall as required." A man should know when to

Chapter 630

yield and when to fight back. It would be better for him to surrender right now.

Being stubborn in this situation wouldn't end well.

Pow, pow, pow...!

Soon, all his men followed his lead and kneeled on the ground, raising their hands high. A dark mass of people was soon kneeling on the ground.

After that, the Silva family's bodyguards, security guards, and others also put all the blame on the Silva family. Then, they also followed the others and kneeled on the ground while raising their hands.

In a blink of an eye, the crowd of two thousand gangsters were all kneeling on the ground and didn't even dare to move.

Only the Silva family members and Margie Cloude were left standing.

They looked around. There were either indifferent gazes, sharp and cold blades, or people kneeling on

Chapter 630

the ground.

At this moment, they didn't know whether to kneel or not!

Harvey, who had not spoken, stepped forward and said coldly, "Brent Silva."

Brent, who was still trembling, grew agitated upon hearing his name being called. He was distraught, and suddenly there was a strong smell of urine from him.

He looked at Harvey not far away tremblingly, unable to say a word.

"Leon Silva..."

Harvey continued to call.

Leon was still a prominent figure. Although his face looked awful, he still forcefully calmed himself.

No one saw it, but he was so agitated he was about to crush his jade ring.

"Margie Cloude..."

Chapter 630

“Ted Dunn...”

“Jonathan Maxwell...”

Harvey looked at the people from the Silva family as he called out these names.

Everyone who had been called by Harvey shook violently.

They were just ordinary words. However, to their ears it sounded like the call of death in their.

Everyone looked at Harvey in a daze, not knowing what he was going to do.

Everyone was frightened and panicked.

Harvey said coldly with his hands behind his back, “Aren’t you always guessing what trump cards do I, the live-in son-in-law, has?”

“Is it Old Niner?”

“Is it George Zabel?”

“Heh...!”

Chapter 630

“Everything you see in front of you right now are all my trump cards...”

Harvey’s words were casual. However, it was equivalent to a thunder striking the ground for the Silvas.

It blasted them all over and made them tremble.

Leon, who always boasted of having a strategic brain, closed his eyes in despair.

One wrong step, and the whole game was lost. He was wrong from the beginning...

As for Margie, she was appalled. Her face was as pale as a white paper. Her jaw kept trembling...

Chapter 631

Chapter 631

Right then, a military jeep stopped in front of everyone.

A middle-aged man in military uniform and cloak stepped out and walked swiftly in the direction William Bell's grave.

“That's... a lieutenant colonel?” ①

A lieutenant colonel's position was not that high in terms of status, so the Silvas would not be interested if they ever bumped into one.

However, this man was Sword Camp's lieutenant colonel!

The Sword Camp, which was one of Country H's top nine military forces!

To be acquainted with a lieutenant colonel of Sword

Chapter 631

Camp was a one in a million chance!

The moment the Silvas saw him, there was a change in their faces.

Everyone's gazes now shifted toward the lieutenant colonel who was heading toward William's grave.

He then stopped right in front of Harvey York with a respectful salute.

"Ethan Hunt, Lieutenant Colonel of South Light's Sword Camp, reporting for duty! The whole Sword Camp has been assembled, sir! Awaiting your next order!"

The sight bewildered everyone.

So much, that they were tongue-tied!

'Ethan Hunt!' ①

This man was the legendary Ethan Hunt, dubbed as one of the four gods of war in South Light's military.

Even if the highest authorities in South Light were

Chapter 631

to meet him, they dared not show even a sliver of discourtesy towards him.

Yet this very Ethan Hunt was so respectful to Harvey, even going as far as to give Harvey a salute.

‘He...! He, he...!’

‘What is his identity?!’

‘This is unimaginable!’

‘Unbelievable!’

The self-proclaimed royal family, the prideful Silvas, could not accept this huge shock.

In their eyes, Harvey York was just a filthy live-in son-in-law. At most, he could only be Prince York’s representative.

Unfortunately, the events that transpired right before their eyes implied that their initial assumptions were wrong.

The truth that was infinitely closer to them was one

Chapter 631

that they would never accept.

Leon Silva closed his eyes, not wanting the fear in his eyes exposed to the public.

Ethan Hunt's actions were the equivalent of affirming all of Leon Silva's earlier guesses.

Harvey York was none other than the man of legend!

This piece of information made Leon Silva suffer to no end.

If only he had known about Harvey's real identity, he would not have made such a judgement!

He would even immediately give up his identity as Prince Silva and bow down before Harvey.

Only people who had experienced the time this man had control could understand how outstanding a person he was back then.

A mere stomp of his leg could shake all of South Light, and this was no exaggeration!

Chapter 631

Prince Silva may be a self-proclaimed strategic man on par with the great Napoleon himself, but in the face of the legendary Prince York, he was utterly helpless.

Harvey York did not pay any attention to Leon, and instead looked at Ethan Hunt with a chuckle.

“Not bad, Ethan.”

Ethan Hunt took a deep breath after, and then said quietly: “We had lived up to your expectations during these three years.”

“The Sword Camp has remained unscathed!”

“We have nearly a thousand men awaiting your orders!”

“Not bad, you’re all pretty good.”

Harvey York smiled. His words alone could summon Ethan Hunt and his men in an instant.

The Sword Camp’s soldiers’ blood were boiling, all

Chapter 631

of them overwhelmed by powerful emotions.

The four men that were standing behind Harvey York straightened. Only now did the crowd see that these men were also dressed in military garb.

Judging by their ranks, they should all be equal to Ethan Hunt.

Yet they willingly stood by Harvey York like leaves on a tree branch, protecting him, with nary a single word from their mouths from beginning till the end.

Cold sweat drenched the Silvas.

Even without Ethan Hunt and the Sword Camp, the four men standing behind Harvey York and protecting him were already impenetrable fortresses they could not even hope to fight.

Harvey York's imposing manner was even more terrifying. Although he was only casually standing there, the aura seeping out of him gave him the impression of a king.

Anyone who looked at him would subconsciously

Chapter 631

worship him.

Was this an impression a mere live-in son-in-law could possess?

Telegram @chinesenovels

Chapter 632

Chapter 632

Harvey York suddenly glared at where the Silvas were standing.

“Didn’t you always wanted to know my true identity?”

“Do you remember the evening banquet in Buckwood that the Zimmers visited when they first came here?”

“Prince York said he would visit as well. It’s true, he did visit...”

“Because I am Prince York!”

Brent Silva naturally remembered that night.

He had been ordered to escort the Zimmers the same day that Prince York claimed to visit.

At that time, the Zimmers were buzzing with

Chapter 632

excitement .

Even Brent Silva could not hold in his exhilaration.

He thought that he could meet the legendary Prince York.

Yet all of that was ruined by the appearance of the live-in son-in-law, Harvey York, who was thought to be the one who offended Prince York.

The Zimmers even labelled Harvey York as a sinner of the family.

After all, he was the one who hindered the Zimmers ' fortune!

There was also the fact that despite the Zimmers having barely made any connections with Sky Corporation, they still succeeded in acquiring a collaborative project because of Mandy Zimmer.

For that reason, both the public and the Zimmers assumed that Mandy Zimmer was secretly Prince York's hidden lover.

But could a mere hidden lover be so worthy, to the

Chapter 632

extent Prince York would hold her family in high regard?

Now, the Silvas understood.

The reason Mandy Zimmer received such a treatment.

The reason outsiders would always say that Mandy Zimmer was Prince York's hidden lover, and while Harvey York was never concerned about the rumors.

Why, the Silvas got wind that someone from the Yorks gifted the Zimmers hefty betrothal gifts!

They could not understand these things before. It felt as if the answers were constantly shrouded in fog.

At this moment, the truth finally dawned upon them.

Harvey York was actually Prince York!

This was the fortification of Harvey York's courage, the reason he was bold enough to provoke the

Chapter 632

Silvas and make them repent in front of William Bell's grave!

The legendary Prince York wasn't just some man who single-handedly built a billion-dollar corporation.

That alone wasn't enough for the Yorks to rise to the top once again.

Rumors said that Prince York enrolled into the military as a head coach, and he even marched to war with the soldiers of Sword Camp to the battlefield in Central America!

He would march head first into battle, pitting himself against a thousand, leading thousands of men of Sword Camp to kill off thousands of lions.

It was a war not even the American Delta Force would not be able to recover from.

It was the same war that had led Sword Camp's top special forces team from Country H into receiving their impressive titles.

Chapter 632

In fact, it was the same war that had given Ethan Hunt his title of one of Country H's four gods of war, with himself standing at the top of the list.

Harvey York was not part of the army, but in the hearts of all of the soldiers in South Light, he was the true uncrowned king of that war.

The Army Saint, Prince York.

This was the title that was given to him privately by the soldiers on the battlefield.

And after that incident, the army of South Light had become one of Harvey York's trump cards.

Harvey York's authority and power in all of South Light back then was not only because of money.

How would it be possible for the Yorks to become a top tier family standing at the tallest ceiling of South Light if Harvey didn't have the backing from the army?

Were it not for the changes brought from internal

Chapter 632

conflicts three years ago, why would it be necessary for him to retreat and stay hidden for three years?

On the day he made a strong comeback after three whole years, he still had the army under his control!

Ethan Hunt could not hold back after Harvey York admitted his identity.

“Prince York!”

“Prince York!”

Nearly a thousand soldiers chanted this legendary name.

The echoes of their chants quaked the ground and shook the skies.

The sight of it all enchanted the Silvas.

‘This is the legendary Prince York!’

However, their fascination died down and the Silvas were soon shivering down their spines. They had actually dared to plot against Prince York...!

Chapter 633

Chapter 633

Harvey York pressed his right hand lightly. His movements instantly stopped any and all sounds around him into pin-drop silence.

Harvey York's indifferent gaze fell on the Silvas. "You never thought of that, did you? The live-in son-in-law in your eyes, a man you could just simply squash, turned out to be the most powerful man in all of South Light. Who can even stop me now that I've returned?"

"The Silvas' capabilities, the so-called top of the first-rated families in all of South Light..."

"A shame you're all just Quinton York's dogs."

"Even he wouldn't dare show up in front of me publicly. What could you possibly do?"

Harvey York's tone was indifferent, yet they cut like

Chapter 633

knives—etched into the peoples' hearts.

The Silvas' faces grew whiter, their bodies trembling to the point where they almost could not stand up straight.

Their heads were spinning constantly.

If it weren't for the family's remaining vestiges of pride supporting them, they would all be kneeling already.

“You - you - you... If you're so strong, how did Quinton York manage to force you out of Buckwood ...? You're not as powerful as you think...!”

Leon Silva was worthy of the title of Prince Silva.

The Silvas didn't even have the courage to open their mouths right now. After closing his eyes for a long time, Leon finally reopened them and spat out a cold remark.

A shame that no matter how calm he pretended to be, his choppy intonation still showed the fear in his heart.

Chapter 633

His words shifted everyone's gaze back towards Harvey York.

Of course, they only dared to look at his feet. They didn't have the guts to stare directly at his face.

Harvey York chuckled and said, "Leon Silva, do you really want to know why?"

"If you think you're fit to know, I can tell you..."

"But those who hear it will all die!"

Harvey York's tone was calm.

Leon Silva, on the other hand, was trembling even harder.

He fiercely grabbed his hands. His fingernails dug sharply into his palms, but he could not feel anything.

'I am not worthy!'

He was not afraid of dying then and there, but he knew that he was unworthy!

Chapter 633

He saw himself as a skilled strategist. He thought of the many steps he took and the meticulously laid out plans he assumed would be effective against the Yorks, to the extent that his family would be able to replace the Yorks and rise to the top of the ranks of Buckwood!

Yet as he stood before this legendary man, he knew he was unfit.

Forget resisting, he did not even have the right to stand straight in front of Prince York!

At that moment, Leon Silva had a strong urge to kneel and worship the man.

However, the small bit of pride in his heart and his honor as a Silva resisted the urge.

‘Anybody could kneel, but if I were to do it, the Silvas... would be no more!’

The Silvas symbolized the royal family of Buckwood. It was the source of their courage, their biggest strength!

Chapter 633

The moment Leon kneeled, everything that belonged to the Silvas would immediately dissipate!

Leon Silva racked his brain in thought.

‘If we did not stand by Quinton York back then, and instead stood by Harvey York, how far could the Silvas have gotten?’

‘Maybe when Prince York had total control of Country H, the Silvas could rise to the top of South Light.’

‘A shame that there is no medicine for regret, and no chance to reselect...’

‘What’s wrong will be wrong. Not only do we have no chance of redemption, we have to pay a terrible price!’

Leon Silva slowly turned his head. The sounds of his neck cracking could be heard.

When he forced himself to look at Harvey York, he could only see a dazzling holy light blinding his

Chapter 633

eyes!

Bang!

In the next moment, the so-called rival of Prince York said to be closest to him in ability, Prince Leon Silva finally could not resist Harvey's enormous pressure and kneeled on the ground.

Telegram @chinesenovels

Chapter 634

Chapter 634

The moment Leon Silva kneeled, the Silvas' strongest pillar of support crumbled.

The Silvas' pride, dignity, and sense of responsibility vanished in an instant.

Slam!

Slam!

Slam!

Brent Silva and the others followed suit, kneeling one by one.

From the beginning, they never had the ability to resist.

Cold sweat drenched their whole bodies, as though they came across a chilly night.

In front of this man, they did not even have the

Chapter 634

right to breathe.

Harvey York looked at the sight with absolute indifference.

The sight of the Silvas kneeling in front of him seemed like it did not affect him at all.

His cold gaze then shifted toward Margie Cloude.

“It’s funny how my brother always thought of you as his beloved. He thought that you were his everything!”

“It’s funny how you betrayed him and sided with the Silvas for fame and glory. You even went as far as to turn yourself into the Silvas’ plaything!”

“While you’re enjoying all of that, have you ever thought about how my brother is wailing in hell without peace?!”

“I told you: if you didn’t come to William’s grave to repent, you’ll find out the consequences...”

“Did you take my words as a joke?”

Chapter 634

“I...”

Margie Cloude too had fallen onto the ground on her knees.

Jonathan Maxwell and Ted Dunn had already peed their pants. Their whole body stank of urine.

On the Silvas' side, Brent Silva was surprisingly the first one to repent.

“I was wrong! I was truly wrong! I'm here to sincerely repent for my sins!”

“We were wrong as well! Please forgive us, Mr. Bell!”

The people all kneeled in front of William Bell's grave, then grovelled one by one.

Margie Cloude didn't care how loudly they banged their heads against the ground.

Bang, bang, bang!

The sound of their heads cracking against the

Chapter 634

ground until blood spurted out was deafening, but nobody dared to stop.

Brent Silva kept grovelling as he covered his face.

“Prince, we were wrong! We’re truly wrong!”

“Please be the bigger person and pretend that we didn’t do anything. Please, let us go!”

The rest of the Silvas began to run their mouths one after another.

“Prince York, we’re all your worshippers!”

“If we had known you were Prince York, we would already be under your heels!”

“We were blind to not have realized it! We hope that you give us a chance to start again, a chance to serve you!”

“Yes, yes, yes! If you would accept the Silvas, we will forever be your humble servants! If you command us to do something, we would never dare defy it!”

Chapter 634

Harvey York let out a playful smile as he stared at the grovelling Silvas.

His sights shifted toward Leon Silva, who still had his back straight even as he kneeled.

“Prince Silva, are you not going to plead as well?”

Leon Silva took a deep breath, then shut his eyes tight.

“Since ancient times, the winner takes all. I have nothing else to say.”

“A loss is a loss, a win is a win...”

“I did not lose because I asked someone to kill him, but because I was careless enough to leave evidence!”

“I am Leon Silva, the Prince! I can admit defeat, but I will not admit my mistakes!”

“ I know I'm not wrong!”

Leon Silva was pretending to be stern, but in truth

Chapter 634

he was too frightened to open his eyes and look directly at Harvey.

To not beg for mercy was his last stand.

Even if he had forced himself to kneel, he could not degrade himself to beg for mercy.

Telegram @chinesenovels

Chapter 635

Chapter 635

Harvey York looked at Leon Silva's struggling for a moment, and then his eyes shifted toward the Silvas. The expressions on their faces were nothing short of hideous.

Harvey could not hold in his laughter.

"Interesting. No matter if you admit defeat, or if you plead this much."

"You only did because I told you of my identity."

"If it weren't for that, would you beg for mercy here? Would you admit defeat?"

"No!"

Harvey York stepped forward and kicked Leon Silva.

A hard slam, and the Silvas' last line of dignity, Leon Silva's knees were shattered.

Chapter 635

No matter how unwilling Leon felt, he could only stay kneeling on the ground in repentance.

After Harvey kicked Leon, he coldly said, “Leon Silva. Brent Silva. Margie Cloude. Jonathan Maxwell. Ted Dunn...”

“Raise your heads.”

Those whose names were uttered, even the prideful Leon Silva, subconsciously raised their heads.

They felt as though their hearts were about to fly out of their throats, they were all extremely anxious.

They all knew what this meant.

Harvey’s actions were the equivalent of the King of Hell calling their names.

Unfortunately, they had to raise their heads when they were in front of Harvey York.

“Even though none of you pushed William into the

Chapter 635

Pearl River, you were the ones who forced him to kill himself!” Harvey York barked coldly.

“No... I...”

Brent Silva wanted to deny the claim, but he immediately trembled after locking eyes with Harvey York.

He could only utter these words as he shivered in fear.

“It’s... It’s us...”

The others did not say anything at all. They could only nod their heads, their faces as pale as ghosts.

Under these circumstances, the fate of not admitting to the crime would be worse than just admitting it.

“Fine! Since you admitted to it, kneel for a week straight in front of William’s grave!”

Harvey York’s tone was ice, speaking as though he was delivering God’s punishment!

Chapter 635

Ethan Hunt marched towards the kneeling crowd and immediately pressed them down on their knees in front of William Bell's grave.

Harvey York looked at William Bell's gravestone and smiled.

"William, I've caught everyone that had a part in killing you here. I'll let them repent in front of you!"

"I'll make the lives of everyone who betrayed you a living hell!"

Shawn Bell and his wife had constantly grieved. They thought they would never have a chance for revenge, and that there would never be justice for their late son.

Never once did they imagine that this day would come.

Even though Harvey York was not their actual son, he had done too much for their family.

Harvey York went on with his speech.

Chapter 635

“But just kneeling here isn’t enough...”

“From today onwards, I’m going to strip the Silvas from everything they have. The Silvas now belong to Uncle Shawn Bell...”

“I won’t kill you, but your lives don’t matter to me anymore.”

“Whoever spreads word about what happened today, I’ll kill them without mercy!”

His words decided their life and death..

The meaning behind Harvey York’s speech was simple.

The Silvas were finished!

On this very day, the family known as the top among all of the first-rate families in Buckwood met their end. Everything the Silvas had were stripped away.

The family to replace them would be the all-new

Chapter 635

Bell family.

For the Silvas, a punishment like this was a fate worse than death.

They had needed at least a few hundred years of inheritance to acquire their current status.

Yet on that day, when they pitted against the legendary Prince York, they had fallen in an instant.

To put it simply; even if the Silvas were billionaires before, one word from Harvey York was enough to turn them into beggars roaming the streets for a bit of food!

Nobody could accept a fall as big as this. They would rather die!

With just a single speech, the all-powerful Silva family that stood at the top of the first-rated families in all of Buckwood, sank into total destruction...

Chapter 636

Chapter 636

Now, Harvey York's cold eyes rested on Chopper Lyon and his gangster subordinates.

Gang bosses like Chopper Lyon often acted high and mighty, as if they lived high above in the clouds, looking down at peasants and despising the common folk.

However, their pride and arrogance were useless here.

When they felt Harvey York's cold gaze, they all crawled onto the ground. Their bodies shook, and cold sweat ran down their faces.

They knew all too well that their families' life and death would be decided by Harvey York.

As his cold eyes bore into the gangsters, Harvey spat venomously, "I won't kill you, but you still

Chapter 636

need to be punished!”

“Even if my brother’s death does not concern you...”

“But the truth remains. You terrorized him! Every single one of you must kneel in front of his grave for three whole days!”

“Yes, yes, yes!”

Chopper Lyon was the first one to speak, trembling in his boots.

“Yes, we understand!”

“Crawl here right now! Nobody gets up!”

At Chopper Lyon’s order, all of his subordinates crawled over to William Bell’s grave and dropped into a kneel.

Chopper Lyon had no time for shame, but he still didn’t dare to look at Harvey York’s face directly. “Prince York! We’ll build a large cemetery here specially for Mr. Bell and assign people to guard this place. I promise you, nobody will scare Mr. Bell

Chapter 636

ever again!”

Harvey York frowned, but he did not reject the offer.

The thought of building a cemetery for William never occurred to him. He did not expect that Chopper Lyon would think of it.

‘It seems this man might have some use after all. No wonder he could be the top gang boss in Buckwood.’

Without batting Chopper an eye, Harvey turned to the Sword Camp soldiers and exclaimed, “Thank you for your hard work, brothers!”

“To serve the prince is our responsibility!”

“All hail the prince!”

The war without gunpowder had finally concluded.

A shame everything that happened here would be destined to stay hidden. ①

The Silvas would not dare to spout any nonsense,

Chapter 636

and the gangsters were ordered to shut their mouths.

Perhaps when the Silvas finally disappeared, then only the world would know...

Right as Harvey York was about to leave, Leon Silva with his shattered knees suddenly raised his head and coldly said, "Prince York, did you really think us Silvas were the ones who orchestrated William Bell's murder back then? That we are the true masterminds?"

Harvey York's expressions changed slightly. He did see a few other silhouettes in the footage, but he still could not confirm their actual identities.

Thinking closely, there were indeed quite a few details worth investigating. It was a shame that not even George Zabel could deduce the clues given.

If someone else was actually involved in the situation... Unless Prince Silva were to spill the beans, everything else would remain an educated guess.

Chapter 636

Say that William Bell did betray Harvey York and leaked Harvey's plans and escape routes. Harvey's businesses involved many parties. The government officials, the army, the gangsters... How could the Silvas possibly go against all of them at once?

Therefore, someone else must be pulling the strings behind the Silvas.

Looking at Harvey York's changing expression, Leon Silva felt he had succeeded.

"If it was now, we might be able to capitalize on all of your well-laid plans."

"But the Silvas from before had no such power!"

"Someone was supporting us from behind the scenes, making us do the dirty work...!"

"Who is it?"

Harvey York's tone was as cold as ice.

"Prince York, haven't you already realized? It's

Chapter 636

your beloved younger brother, Quinton York!” Leon Silva laughed coldly as he uttered the name.

Harvey had guessed who the true mastermind was, but he still had mixed feelings about it even after hearing Leon Silva’s confession.

A king’s family has no affection. Wasn't it the same with families that had all the wealth and money in the world?

Leon Silva kept on talking.

“I don’t know why you retreated from Buckwood before...”

“I only know that someone in the Yorks had stopped Quinton York from dealing with you and stripping everything away from you.” ❶

Chapter 637

Chapter 637

“But Quinton York was furious! He came to me on his own accord. His goal was simple, and that was to never allow you the chance to return to Buckwood!”

Now, Harvey York finally understood why the Silvas had dealt with William Bell.

Originally, having William Bell alive in Buckwood was beneficial for the Yorks. At least, they could observe Harvey York’s plans through William.

Yet the Silvas suddenly plotted against William and used foul schemes to achieve their goal.

‘It was Quinton York after all.’

‘That meant the man from the footage was Quinton York. Then, the other blurry silhouettes...’

‘Are Queenie York and the twins involved too?’

Chapter 637

Leon Silva studies Harvey's face. He sighed and said: "If us Silvas weren't so ambitious, Quinton York wouldn't have the chance to control us..."

"A shame I was blinded by my obsessions. I did not gauge the Silvas' power properly."

"It wasn't wrong of me to make my move, but I failed to accurately judge my limits."

Leon Silva continued to speak.

"Prince York, winner takes all. It has been so since ancient times, but today, my loss was unjust!"

Harvey York turned on his heel and left, his expression as cold as ice.

...

The time passed.

On the Zimmers' side.

Mandy Zimmer had already dried her tears. She had fainted three times from crying too much.

Chapter 637

Simon Zimmer called Senior Zimmer on his phone to ask for information.

Senior Zimmer was naturally following the incident closely. He frowned and said: "I just received news from outside. It seems like the scuffle has ended."

"But nobody came out even in the end. Harvey York couldn't be seen anywhere, either. That live-in son-in-law most likely died there!"

Because of the rumors saying that Mandy Zimmer was Prince York's secret lover, Senior Zimmer was still worried about her safety.

After Harvey York's incident, Senior Zimmer asked: "How's Mandy?"

"Senior, she passed out three times..."

Simon Zimmer sighed.

Senior Zimmer furiously exclaimed: "How do you even comfort people?! Comfort her properly!"

"Tell her that it is good for her now that Harvey

Chapter 637

York has died!”

“Now she can marry someone else without caring about any repercussions!”

“If not with the Silvas, we’ll find a better family. Even being Prince York’s mistress would be good!”

“All of you remember! Harvey York is dead! The chance for the Zimmers to rise up is here!”

On the other side of the phone, Senior Zimmer burst out laughing.

‘There should be no concerns about Prince York now that Harvey York is dead, right?’

The Zimmers were shameless enough to give away Mandy Zimmer as a mistress for Prince York. Even if she was made a nameless woman, Prince York would likely give the Zimmers endless favors!

Senior Zimmer could not hold in his glee as he thought of the fame and glory that was to come.

‘This is my destiny!’

Chapter 637

After a long while, Mandy Zimmer reopened her eyes.

She gathered her remaining strength to look at Simon Zimmer and Lilian Yates. "Father, mother... How's the situation with Harvey?"

Simon Zimmer let out a huge sigh. He pretended to be grieving, but he could not hide the joy in his eyes.

"Honestly, Mandy. It would be better for you if I didn't tell you."

"Father, what's going on?! Tell me!" Mandy Zimmer asked, grabbing onto Simon's arm.

"It's fine if you want to know, but you must promise me that you'll stay calm."

"According to the information from your grandfather, Harvey York should already be dead by now...!" Simon Zimmer said.

Mandy Zimmer trembled slightly and fell to the ground, mumbling, "Harvey..."

Chapter 638

Chapter 638

Even as night arrived, Harvey York did not return. 2

The news made Mandy Zimmer faint once more. She still could not accept the fact that her husband was already dead.

Senior Zimmer organized a huge evening banquet, saying it was to mourn for Harvey York's death. In truth, it was a celebration.

The Zimmers had finally gotten rid of the live-in son-in-law!

In her confusion, Mandy Zimmer was taken to the banquet by Simon Zimmer and Lilian Yates.

Xynthia Zimmer, on the other hand, had locked herself in her room with no intention of coming out. Hidden inside with no one to see, her tears kept flowing out to the point she was almost blinded by

Chapter 638

them.

At the Zimmer Villa...

Senior Zimmer stood up, trembling, as he held a cup full of wine.

“Tonight’s goal of the banquet is simple!”

“Number one: to restore Mandy Zimmer’s identity as a Zimmer!”

“Number two: to celebrate Mandy Zimmer in finally regaining her freedom, completely free from her shackles!”

“Number three: to preach our continued support for Mandy Zimmer as the CEO of the Silver Nimbus Enterprise. Since it’s our family business anyway, everyone should endorse it!”

Senior Zimmer was in a joyous mood. Harvey York was dead, and Mandy Zimmer was just muddling along without aim. What harm did he have by continuing to let her be the CEO?

Everything was still under his control, anyway.

Chapter 638

The other Zimmers all held their cups high, full of smiles. The happiness from celebrating New Years could not come close to this!

Simon Zimmer and Lilian Yates' expressions kept changing constantly, and then they finally forced on a smile.

They were both smart people. They thought that their status in the family would change after Harvey York died.

But looking at Senior Zimmer's attitude, they knew that nothing had changed.

What could they say? Harvey York was already dead, and the dead cannot be resurrected!

Mandy Zimmer was without aim, looking as if she had lost her soul.

While Senior Zimmer was having a stomach full of wine and food, his gaze turned to Mandy Zimmer and he smiled.

"Oh, Mandy! Since that worthless sack of trash is

Chapter 638

gone, you're an unmarried woman!"

"Buckwood is full of talent men! Tell me if you have anybody in your mind, I'll arrange it for you!"

"If you really have no idea who to choose, I can help you with that as well!"

"Rest assured. It won't be another worthless sack of trash this time. I will carefully pick a wealthy man for you!"

Senior Zimmer was triumphant. He looked forward to Mandy Zimmer's muddled and confused state. Only then could he command her as he willed.

"Grandfather, I'm not marrying another man. I'll remain a widow for him..."

Despite Mandy Zimmer looking as though she was a lost soul, she still said this.

"No, you're still young! That, and you're a Zimmer. If I tell you to marry another man, you will marry another man!"

Senior Zimmer waved his hand, full of dominance.

Chapter 638

“Are you sure you want my wife to marry another man?”

At that moment, a voice as cold as ice had echoed from the entrance of the hall.

Everyone subconsciously looked at the direction of the entrance. In the next second, the more timid Zimmer women burst into loud screams of terror.

Harvey York was standing there!

The man rumored to be dead was actually standing there... he was alive!

“Harvey... Harvey York?!”

Senior Zimmer was shaking in his boots. He almost lost his balance and fell to the ground.

“You...! You... are you a man or a ghost?!”

The gleeful Zack Zimmer was terrified to the point where he almost hid under a table.

Everyone was perplexed, scared out of their minds.

Chapter 638.

‘A man announced as deceased had come back to life?’

‘How could this be?!’

The Zimmers shuddered. Most of them were on the verge of receiving heart attacks.

Telegram @chinesenovels

Chapter 639

Chapter 639

“Do I look like a ghost to you?”

Harvey York strode into the hall full of terrified people staring at him, and stopped right in front of Zack Zimmer.

Zack Zimmer trembled and reached out to touch Harvey's hand. Perplexed, he stammered, “It's warm? You're still alive? How could this be?”

Harvey York replied coolly, “Seems like you really want me dead.”

“Huh? Oh, no!” Zack Zimmer subconsciously denied the claim. He was not sure why he was so scared of Harvey York's aura.

“Harvey!”

Mandy Zimmer had returned to her senses the

Chapter 639

moment Harvey appeared. She rushed toward him and hugged him tightly.

Harvey York returned the hug and patted her on the head.

“I’ve made you worry, I should’ve come back sooner ...”

“No, I’m glad you were able to come home...”

The watching spectators grew disgusted by the heartwarming scene played by the two.

Senior Zimmer barely stopped himself from trembling. He looked at Harvey York with a bewildered stare.

“Impossible! The Silvas and Chopper Lyon wouldn’t have allowed someone like you to come back alive!”

“Yeah! How are you still alive if the Silvas wanted to end you? This is witchcraft!”

“You should’ve been dead!”

Chapter 639

The others began to talk over each other. In their eyes, the scene before them was an impossibility.

Even Mandy Zimmer, who was in Harvey York's arms, raised her head to stare at him with confused eyes.

"Right, Harvey... how did you get out of that situation?"

Harvey York chuckled.

"I told you that I was going to handle everything."

"I had a classmate that was killed by the Silvas three years ago. His parents are incredible. They prepared for their revenge ever since then..."

"I only went to provoke the Silvas to help his parents with their plans."

"Today, his parents made their move in front of my classmate's grave and immediately dealt with the Silvas, Chopper Lyon, and everyone involved. They even brought along people from the military! Oh,

Chapter 639

the spectacle! Tsk, tsk, tsk...”

“They even said that when the Silvas are finished, they’ll even the Silvas’ businesses to me.”

The Zimmers grew dumbfounded after hearing Harvey York’s explanation.

They all looked at him as though he had said something utterly inconceivable.

‘How can a live-in son-in-law have such good luck?’

‘His classmate’s parents actually have such incredible power? So much that they could easily deal with the Silvas, Chopper Lyon, and all of the other gang bosses? And after all that, they’re going to give him all of the Silvas’ businesses?’

‘If so, wouldn’t he gain millions of dollars in an instant?’

‘Then... wouldn’t he turn from a filthy street rat beaten up by everyone to the youngest CEO in Buckwood?!’

Chapter 639

“Harvey, I...”

Senior Zimmer was quick to react to the situation. No matter how and why Harvey York had made connections with such incredible big shots, he had to immediately make up with Harvey!

‘How can a man like this be in control of the Silvas’ businesses?’

‘If the Zimmers can use the Silvas’ reputation, then we can become a first-rate family in Buckwood in no time!’

Yet as Senior Zimmer began to think of ways to coax Harvey York, Harvey was already leaving with Mandy Zimmer.

The Zimmers all subconsciously rushed outside.

Businesses worth millions! Who wouldn’t be excited about that?

Senior Zimmer then exclaimed: “From now on, Harvey York will be the Zimmers’ pride! Chase

Chapter 639

him!”

A true shame that Harvey York and Mandy Zimmer were nowhere in their sights.

At night, Harvey York took Mandy Zimmer to the Spinning Restaurant on Buckwood Tower for dinner. Incidentally, they met with Shawn Bell.

After seeing the two elderly people, the last bit of Mandy Zimmer’s doubt toward Harvey York dissipated.

Later that night, Senior Zimmer dialed Harvey York at least a few dozen times.

As for the others, all of them hurried toward Simon Zimmer’s house.

Naturally, they wanted to take the chance to make up with Harvey York. Of course, it would be better if they could siphon his money out of his hands.

Harvey York was already impatient. He finally answered the call and said, “I’ll go with Mandy Zimmer to take over the Silva Corporation

Chapter 639

tomorrow. If you want, you can come with. Stop bothering us for the night.”

Telegram @chinesenovels

Chapter 640

Chapter 640

The next day, early morning.

The Zimmer family had eagerly followed Harvey York and Mandy Zimmer to the Silva Corporation. Even the unstable Senior Zimmer had come along with them.

How glorious this must be!

There was no way he would allow himself to miss it!

The Zimmers became exhilarated when they saw the Silva Corporation's hundred-storey office building.

Even though the Silva Corporation could not compare to the Sky Corporation, it was already quite an impressive company.

Since Sky Corporation was directly under Prince

Chapter 640

York's command, not just any ordinary company could compare itself to Sky Corporation.

Even among the first-rated families in all of Buckwood, a business like Silva Corporation was scarce.

Right now, the Zimmers were filled with excitement.

Mandy Zimmer was no different.

After finding the reception desk in the hall, Harvey York immediately expressed his intentions.

"I'm Harvey York, I'm here to take over the Silva Corporation!"

The receptionist looked at him, perplexed.

"Are you mad? I've never heard of such news."

Mandy Zimmer said, "Didn't the Silvas already drop out of the Silva Corporation? Hasn't Leon Silva resigned the position of CEO?"

"Yeah, that's right! But the Silva Corporation isn't

Chapter 640

wholly owned by the Silvas. There's still the board of directors, and they had already taken the Silvas' shares." The receptionist explained.

Mandy Zimmer's expression changed.

"What do you mean?"

"Do you not know that someone else is controlling the Silva Corporation's shares?"

"Even the people working here knew that the Silvas were just puppets."

The receptionist was looking at all of them oddly.

Mandy Zimmer was quite experienced with strange occurrences, so this kind of thing would not phase her anymore.

Still, something like that was a rare sight.

Harvey York frowned, he realized something.

'The Yorks!'

'Quinton York!'

Chapter 640

'He had total control of all of the Silvas' shares since the beginning.'

'So that really means the Silvas belonged to the Yorks'... They were Quinton's puppets all along!'

'Then, Silva Corporation had always been Quinton York's.'

As soon as Senior Zimmer and the other Zimmers squeezed their way in front, they immediately demanded, "What's going on?"

Quinn Zimmer swiftly replied after checking her phone, "Grandfather, the Yorks have total control of the Silva Corporation's shares..."

"After Leon Silva lost his position of CEO and handed over the Silvas' shares, the whole company would be under the Yorks' control!"

"The Yorks..."

The Zimmers all looked at each other. In South Light, that name alone would strike terror in

Chapter 640

everyone's hearts.

Senior Zimmer said, "So that means that Silva Corporation had always been under the Yorks' control! It has nothing to do with Harvey York at all!"

The receptionist nodded.

"Right, the Silva Corporation had always been under the Yorks' control since three years ago. Other people had nothing to do with this."

"I don't even know where you all got the courage from! Saying that you want to take over the Silva Corporation?"

"Is this your first time in Buckwood? Don't you have any common sense?"

"Or were you all fooled by a con man, and now you're looking for trouble here?"

"This company serves the Yorks directly. If you want to cause a ruckus here, it's best if you consider the consequences..."

Chapter 640

The receptionist shot them a glare of disdain.

‘Who even are these people?!’

‘How dare they come here to show-off! Aren’t they scared of looking like they’re mentally challenged?’

The change in the Zimmers’ faces were unpredictable. It was as if they immediately switched sides again, and the spectacle was truly exciting to see.

Just then, a man who held the title of Silva Corporation’s new CEO, Joel Flynn walked inside, accompanied by his staff.

Chapter 641

Chapter 641

The previous CEO of Silva Corporation was Leon Silva.

But he had already resigned the day before, and had returned all of the Silvas' shares.

Quinton York's most trusted subordinate, Joel Flynn, was temporarily appointed as Silva Corporation's new CEO.

He was a returned college student, trained by Quinton York during the last two years.

When he unexpectedly received the news that he'd be appointed as the CEO of Silva Corporation the day before, Joel Flynn became excited to the point he could not sleep.

To be the CEO of a million dollar corporation was truly the peak of life!

Chapter 641

As for why the Silvas had forfeited all of their shares and why Leon Silva would willingly give up his position of CEO, he did not know. He did not want to know, either.

He only knew that he had successfully risen up the ranks.

Quinton York only had one request for Joel Flynn: properly manage Silva Corporation. If anyone dared to take the Silva Corporation, he was asked to end their lives.

Joel Flynn has the Yorks supporting him, after all.

With the top family in all of South Light, the Yorks, acting as his shield and backbone, he had no reason to fear anybody.

When he was taking over the Silva Corporation, every department was extremely cooperative. He was delighted.

He had just finished handling the company procedures and was ready to take a break until he

Chapter 641

saw Harvey York and a dozen other people gathered together at the reception desk.

He frowned and headed toward the scene. "What's going on here?"

The receptionist immediately replied, "CEO Flynn, these people are indiscriminately coming here to take over Silva Corporation! I'm assuming that they're here to make trouble."

After hearing that, Joel Flynn's gaze had shifted toward Harvey York and Mandy Zimmer. When he saw Mandy Zimmer, he paused for a brief moment, stunned by her beauty.

However, he soon calmed himself and chuckled coldly.

"I was wondering who it was. I didn't know it was the family that the Silvas solicited to come to Buckwood!"

"You're all really funny! A second-rated family from a small pond dares coming to Buckwood and

Chapter 641

calling themselves upstarts here.”

“Now that your master has fallen, you actually came here to take over their corporation? What are you thinking?”

Harvey York coldly cut in, “So Quinton York sent you?”

Joel Flynn froze, and then sized up Harvey York for a brief moment before chuckling again.

“Oh, if it isn’t the Zimmers’ live-in son-in-law. I’ve seen your files....”

“How dare a live-in son-in-law like you utter my master’s name! You’re disobeying him! You’re being presumptuous!”

Joel Flynn’s expression had turned as cold as ice.

He did have information about Harvey York. The files suspected that he was an agent for Prince York.

Joel Flynn did not experience the era of Prince York, and he was Quinton York’s most trusted

Chapter 641

subordinate. How could he be afraid of a man that was only suspected to be Prince York's agent?

"Let me think. It must be you, the live-in son-in-law, who thinks he could take over the corporation after the Silvas had fallen. Am I right?"

"The Zimmers are a bunch of fools to follow you and take over Silva Corporation together!"

"Who do you think you are?"

"Do you not know your own limits?"

"Don't you know how to gauge whether you have the capability to take over the corporation or not?"

"Even if the Yorks allowed anyone to take over Silva Corporation, do you think that you're fit for the job?"

Joel Flynn was speechless.

"It looks like you all are a bunch of fools. Idiots!"

"Hahaha...!"

Chapter 641

The Silva Corporation staff around them burst out laughing.

‘Hilarious! How can these people show up on the first day of the new CEO taking office?’

‘If we didn’t know any better, we’d think someone hired a stand-up comedian here!’

Senior Zimmer, Simon Zimmer, Sean Zimmer, and the rest of the Zimmmer went as red as a tomato as they lowered their heads down, ashamed by the ridicule pointed towards them.

Telegram @ChineseNovels

Chapter 642

Chapter 642

Embarrassing!

Truly humiliating!

At that moment, the Zimmers felt like country bumpkins entering a city for the first time, like simpletons overwhelmed by luxurious surroundings. They were as ashamed as they could be.

The Zimmers might not even have another chance at making a living in Buckwood. They're being turned into laughing stocks here!

“Hurry up and leave! Silva Corporation doesn't welcome idiots!”

“Security, get these poor people out of here!”

At Joel Flynn's orders, a crowd of security guards

Chapter 642

came out and surrounded them.

Harvey York and the Zimmers were swiftly kicked out.

“Bunch of idiots!” The security guard exclaimed.

Every single one of the security guards were laughing their stomachs off. This was their first time in their career seeing people this dumb.

Disgraceful!

This was the most disgraceful thing that the Zimmers had experienced, by far!

Even outsiders would soon know of their shameful experience!

In the future, the Zimmers would be the biggest laughing stock in all of Buckwood!

Harvey York looked gloomy, but he did not utter a single word.

The reason he did not deal with Joel Flynn was very

Chapter 642

simple. Quinton York would never be so foolish and naive as to reveal his trump cards immediately.

If he wanted to deal with Quinton York, he would still need to spend some time and gather more strength.

The head of the four masters of the Yorks, Quinton York, was known to have quite the impressive skills.

...

After getting kicked out, the Zimmers were humiliated beyond belief.

One by one, they began glaring at Harvey.

Everyone had claimed that this man would become a millionaire last night. They had tried their hardest to get close and make up to him!

They did not think that he would still be the same filth with no identity till this day... A worthless sack of trash!

'Why won't he just die already?!'

Chapter 642

‘Because of him, the Zimmers had lost all face! How can we still make a living here after this?’

“Harvey York!”

“Tell me what’s going on!”

“You came here to take over Silva Corporation without even getting the facts straight first?!”

“I want to slap you dead!”

Senior Zimmer was shaking with anger. He had almost gone insane from sheer fury.

Zack Zimmer gnashed his teeth and snarled, “Are you brain-dead, Harvey?!”

“Does Silva Corporation even have anything to do with you?!”

“You think you’re part of the Yorks just because you have the same surname?!”

“Screw you!”

“Just look at Master Quinton York, the true head

Chapter 642

out of the four masters of the Yorks! One word from him was enough to appoint someone as the new CEO of a million-dollar corporation!”

“What about you? What other things can a live-in son-in-law, a worthless sack of trash like you do other than show-off and daydream?”

“How are you fit to have that surname?!”

“I - I - I...!”

Zack Zimmer was agitated to the point where he began making threatening gestures. He remembered acting so respectful toward Harvey York in a phone call last night and wanted to choke himself to death.

Sean Zimmer was boiling with anger, so much that he was almost jumping off the ground.

“The family’s reputation is thrown out the window because of you!”

Simon Zimmer and Lilian Yates were also trembling with anger.

Chapter 642

Lilian Yates barked loudly, “How did we even manage to get a worthless sack of trash like you as our son-in-law? Stop daydreaming, will you? Can you at least try to be more sensible?!”

“How unlucky are we to have a son-in-law like you? In the future, don’t tell anyone that we’re related!”

In all honesty, Mandy Zimmer was also disappointed by Harvey York.

This incident was far worse than all the other ones he had caused.

It was not easy for the Zimmers to stand tall in Buckwood, but now, how could they continue to stay here if their reputation was gone?

Harvey York was to blame for everything.

Mandy Zimmer glared at Harvey York, vexed.

“How many times have I told you to be more sensible as a person and stop making up things? You

Chapter 642

've really disappointed me this time!"

"You didn't help the family gain a better reputation, instead you ran it all into the ground!"

"But... if you could change your ways, I still trust in your abilities."

Telegram @chinesenovels

Chapter 643

Chapter 643

Seeing how Mandy Zimmer still tried to comfort herself even in a situation like this, Harvey York smiled.

“Alright, I’ll listen to you in the future.”

“But rest assured, I’ll have Silva Corporation sooner or later.”

“When that time comes, I’ll change the name to Zimmer and hand it over to you as a gift.”

Harvey York narrowed his eyes, he was truly prepared to do as he said. To him, this matter was nothing difficult anyway.

As soon as Quinton York was dealt with, this plan would be set in stone.

“Stop bragging already!”

Chapter 643

“I really want to slap you dead!”

Senior Zimmer took a deep breath, and gave another warning.

“Simon, take care of your own live-in son-in-law! He has nothing to do with the Zimmers in the future!”

“Don’t drag the family down with you if something were to happen!”

“If not, don’t blame us for kicking your family out!”

“Leave!”

Senior Zimmer turned to leave after speaking, boiling with anger.

Simon Zimmer and Lilian Yates glared at Harvey York furiously and shouted in unison, “You’re really just filth through and through!”

Soon after, the two left as well.

Mandy Zimmer tried to comfort Harvey.

Chapter 643

“Harvey, my parents are just venting at you. Don’t pay any mind to it. Honestly, I’m also a bit mad at you.”

“It’s fine, we still have the Silver Nimbus Enterprise. If I can manage it properly, I can still take care of you.”

Harvey York smiled without a care in his eyes.

“Don’t worry about it, let bygones be bygones.”

He really couldn’t be bothered. If he took offense over something as small as this, he would not be able to survive the life of a live-in son-in-law in the past three years.

Not long after, Harvey York and Mandy Zimmer left Silva Corporation.

A Lexus had stopped discreetly at the entrance of the Silva Corporation building.

Joel Flynn hurried out of the building to greet the newcomer, but he did not bring anyone else to

Chapter 643

accompany him. He knew that this man was extremely discreet.

The person that exited the car was none other than the head of the four masters of the Yorks, Quinton York.

He was wearing a classic traditional suit as usual, emitting an aura of superiority.

“Master York, they’ve left. I paid close attention to Harvey York as you had asked, but he seemed like he had nothing to offer other than his bragging...” Joel Flynn laughed as he spoke, bowing to Quinto all the while.

Quinton York flashed him a cold smirk.

“How many times have I told you? Do your best, even if it’s for something minor. I’m not in place to explain to you his identity, but you’ll regret it if you underestimate him, even for a little bit!”

Joel Flynn showed disdain toward Harvey York. To him, he could not care less even if Harvey York was

Chapter 643

indeed Prince York's agent.

'Prince York was only a thing of the past! How could he possibly contend against this man supporting me behind the scenes, Quinton York?'

But since Quinton York did ask for it, Joel still bowed and replied, "Rest assured, Master York. Since you've asked this of me, I'll go all out. Although, I'm still not sure what you want to achieve..."

"I want Harvey York to jump into the Pearl River on his own." Quinton spat icily. "I want his woman to crawl in front of me like an obedient little puppy, begging me to pay her a visit!"

Joel Flynn grew perplexed as he listened to Quinton.

In Joel's eyes, Quinton York was always prideful. He was a king that did not have a care in the world, a man who could maintain his composure no matter who or what he was facing.

Yet at the mention of a mere filth like Harvey York,

Chapter 643

Quinton's composure vanished and he revealed all of his suppressed hatred.

'Looks like I should be more serious about this.'

Joel Flynn warned himself silently.

At the same time, another Lexus parked secretly in the shade of the groves not far away from Quinton York and Joel Flynn.

The car window slowly slid down, revealing a sweetly smiling face.

"He really can't hold in his temper when facing big brother..."

Chapter 644

Chapter 644

The social circle of the upper class elites in Buckwood wasn't large, but it was not that small either.

Yet in the span of a single day, news of the Silvas' defeat in Buckwood had spread like wildfire.

Aside from that, the upstarts in Buckwood, the Zimmers, actually tried to take over Silva Corporation.

Naturally, this matter was treated as a joke by many.

The Zimmers were unable to hold their heads up high anymore.

Even Senior Zimmer didn't dare to walk out of the villa, afraid that people would point fingers at him.

In a single night, the Zimmers had become the

Chapter 644

laughing stock of Buckwood's upper class elites.

The story had also cancelled out the sudden shock regarding the Silvas' sudden retreat.

When people talked about the Silvas, the Zimmers would be mentioned as well.

Fortunately, Harvey York and Mandy Zimmer did not live with Simon Zimmer at the moment. If not, Simon Zimmer wouldn't have dared stepping outside with his family.

Only Xynthia Zimmer knew that her brother-in-law was able to give her sister Silva Corporation as he promised. However, she would not tell anybody about it.

As for Mandy Zimmer, she was only glad that Harvey York was still alive.

After this incident, Silver Nimbus Enterprise's projects resumed as they should, as there was no longer any suppression from the Silvas. The next day, Mandy Zimmer started going to work as usual.

Chapter 644

She had to take care of the family, after all.

Harvey York, on the other hand, dropped by Tyson Woods' temporary stronghold in Buckwood early in the morning.

It was a golf course with terrible business. Tyson Woods had simply taken over the place and made it a base for his men to refurbish and train at.

Harvey York was here to look for a few useful men.

He anticipated that his troubles would increase significantly after this. He could not just come to Tyson Woods everytime he needed men, after all.

If someone were to be called all the time, even Harvey York would find it troublesome.

If he had more men by his side, it would be more convenient for him.

After hearing they would have the opportunity to act as Prince York's personal bodyguard, a few dozen men hand-picked by Tyson Woods himself became so excited that their knees had almost

Chapter 644

stopped working.

William Bell's incident was still deeply etched in their minds. It would truly be the biggest blessing in their lifetime if they could serve the legendary Prince York. A blessing from the gods!

Harvey York wanted to transfer a few men from Sword Camp. Yet as he did not have an official position during his time in the military, it would be a problem if people had spread word about this, especially when he did not have the right to order a transfer.

His next step was to fight Quinton York head on. If any sort of leverage were to fall into Quinton York's hands, it might just be the decisive factor that would contribute to Harvey's loss.

Harvey York did not have any intention to underestimate the man who managed to drive him out of Buckwood three years ago.

"Sir York, Master Caesar and the other elders have prepared some men for your use. All of them were

Chapter 644

carefully picked and went through rigorous training in the past three years. Some were even mercenaries that had participated in the war in Central America.”

“But I still can’t guarantee their loyalty just yet. I’ll give them to you after I’ve trained them myself for a while.”

“As for the men that I’ve personally trained, rest assured. They’re perfectly trustworthy!” Tyson Woods bowed, speaking respectfully.

Harvey York gave his words a brief thought, and then gave a slight nod.

“Right.”

‘There’s no knowing what lies in a man’s heart. Although Master Caesar and the other elders showed me respect and came to me as soon as I asked them to, three whole years had passed.’

‘People change. We need to retrain the men they offered. I can only use them after doing thorough

Chapter 644

background checks on them.'

After Harvey York finished arranging the men that would be his personal bodyguards, he left.

When he returned to the Gardens Residence, he saw that Xynthia Zimmer was there as well.

"Aren't you going to school today?"

Harvey York frowned slightly. This little sister-in-law of his gave him headaches sometimes.

"The lessons are meaningless. I already know the things they taught in class, anyway. I've learned everything from my brother-in-law!"

Xynthia Zimmer shook her long legs casually, sipping on her yogurt drink.

Harvey York was speechless. Xynthia was the type to do whatever she wanted, regardless of anything. Sometimes he felt she was harder to deal with than his own adopted sister, Queenie York. 3

Chapter 645

Chapter 645

“Oh, right. Godfather and Godmother are coming to Buckwood. When they get here, they’ll treat us to food. You should come along, brother-in-law!”

Xynthia Zimmer told him the reason for her being there, grinning.

“Sure.”

Harvey York didn’t know much about how Xynthia Zimmer met a nobleman when she was born. Under the man’s guidance, she was recognized by a husband and wife with a high status as their goddaughter.

Once every year, Xynthia Zimmer would go and stay with the married couple for a while.

This married couple must have come from a powerful family. Even though they recognized

Chapter 645

Xynthia Zimmer as their goddaughter, they rarely involved themselves with the Zimmers.

This was why Harvey York had never seen her godparents.

Since they were people of high stature, something big must have happened if they wanted to come.

That night, Simon Zimmer called over Harvey York and Mandy Zimmer to accompany him.

Simon Zimmer sent Harvey a furious glare. He then took a deep breath and said, "Forget about what happened yesterday. Tomorrow, something big is about to happen. You better not embarrass us!"

"If you act that way again, I'll really kick you out of the house!"

Mandy Zimmer asked curiously, "Father, what's going on tomorrow?"

She was really curious. Simon Zimmer hated Harvey York to the bone, so why would he call Harvey York back suddenly and carefully talk about these

Chapter 645

things? Maybe something big was going on after all?

Simon Zimmer fell into deep thought. Realization dawned upon him.

“Mandy, you know that your sister has godparents, don’t you? She has to live with them for a couple of months every year, right?”

Mandy Zimmer replied, “Yes.”

Simon Zimmer said sternly, “This was something we couldn’t tell you before since you both were still so young...”

“Your sister’s so-called godparents are actually your mother’s youngest sister and her brother-in-law.”

“Your mother came from the Yates family. Actually, the Yateses are an ancient yet powerful family. Unfortunately, your mother was put at a disadvantage when she married me.”

“Even after all these years, the Yateses still won’t recognize us as a part of them. This time, they

Chapter 645

purposely sent their people to contact us. They even wanted to have a meal with our family...”

“So, you cannot lose face for us, no matter what! Understood?”

Simon Zimmer was actually trying to persuade himself. If it weren't for the Yateses ordering everyone to attend, he would never be so quick to forgive Harvey York!

He would not dare to disobey the Yateses.

Lilian Yates looked different than her usual self. She added sternly, “Mandy, Xynthia. Be very careful! My family is a big one, and maybe only second to the Yorks that stood at the top...”

“My brother, your uncle, his status was too extraordinary...”

“So, I'm telling you earlier just in case. There can not be any mistakes, no matter what!”

“Especially you, Harvey! If you embarrass us, I'm kicking you out of the house!”

Chapter 645

Lilian Yates had finally shown her capable side, but it was apparent that she was nervous.

“Yes, mother.” ①

Mandy Zimmer nodded.

Xynthia Zimmer was astonished. She never expected her godparents were actually her mother's sister and brother-in-law!

Only Harvey York smiled as if he had no care in the world.

“Mom, Dad. Aren't we just having a meal with them? Why are you so nervous about it?”

“How can we not?! They're not ordinary people!”

Simon Zimmer had a solemn look on his face.

“The Yateses are extremely discreet, revealing none of their true power. They might not be on par with the Yorks of South Light, but...”

“Their businesses are blooming, and their

Chapter 645

industries are branching to every corner of the world. They have an incredible influence all around the globe.”

“If we offend the Yateses, we’ll all be finished!”

Telegram @chinesenovels

Chapter 646

Chapter 646

On the next day, the Yateses had arrived.

Amongst them were Lilian Yate's brother-in-law Leyton Luv and her sister Tanya Yates.

They booked their rooms at the most luxurious hotel in Buckwood, the Thousand Woods Hotel and even treated their guests to dinner in the same hotel.

One night stay in the Thousand Woods Hotel would cost at least a thousand dollars and not to mention the presidential suite which would cost around twelve thousand dollars per night.

Every time Leyton and Tanya travelled to places, their rule was to stay in the presidential suite of a five-star hotel without exceptions.

After finding out the price, the expressions on

Chapter 646

Lilian and Simon Zimmer turned miserable.

The price for just one night would have covered their living expenses for a long time already.

In the VIP888 private room in the hotel's banquet hall which was on the second floor.

There were four people sitting inside.

Leyton and Tanya were both seated on the main seats. Xynthia Zimmer on the other hand, who arrived yesterday night already seemed slightly dejected.

Other than that, there was a young man sitting opposite her as well.

Harvey York looked at Xynthia curiously as she was excited for the whole night yesterday, but at that moment her face was devoid of excitement and joy after seeing Leyton and Tanya.

After noticing Harvey and Mandy Zimmer's presence, Xynthia trotted towards them and cried chirpily, "Sister, brother-in-law, you're finally

Chapter 646

here!”

Leyton, Tanya and the young man all stood up straight away.

Leyton seemed mature and stable, with an air of authority with patience and calm.

Meanwhile, Tanya dressed fancily in designer's items all over her body and was richly bejewelled.

Moreover, she took such good care of her skin that she looked almost like a popstar, looking stylish and radiant as ever.

The young man on the other hand gave the impression of being polite and well-mannered, but had a mischievous glint in his eyes.

After giving it some thought, Harvey figured that the young man was most probably someone from the armed forces, and might be even holding some position and have a certain amount of power.

After greeting each other, Simon and the wife awkwardly sat down.

Chapter 646

Although they're Lilian's younger sister and brother-in-law, they treated Xynthia as if she's their own daughter because they didn't have any children.

However, Lilian's decision of getting married to Simon was equivalent to betraying the Yate family. That's why now that when she and Tanya were seated together, the difference in their current statuses were like night and day.

In front of Leyton, Simon didn't really speak up as much as he's a bit intimidated by this brother-in-law as well.

Lilian landed her gaze upon the stranger and asked, "Little Sister, Brother-in-law, he is..."

Tanya grinned in delight and replied, "Big Sister, he is the son of big brother's good friend, his name is Conor Ward.

"We've been watching this kid as he grows up. Not only does he have a great personality, he's also a graduate from Oxford University!

Chapter 646

“After graduation, he didn’t choose to inherit his family business. Instead, he joined the army and he is currently in the Golden Sands’ forces. He won several champion awards in just a few years’ time in the army...”

“This time, the reason why he’s in Buckwood is because he’s participating in the entrance examination of the Sword Camp...”

“Once he succeeds, he will be a part of the Sword Camp’s troop!”

“His future’s success would be incredible!”

Thinking to himself awhile, Harvey just remembered that it’s the time of the year for the Sword Camp to recruit new people.

After all, the Sword Camp was one of the best amongst the top nine troops of country H.

After they managed to wipe out the American Delta Force in the Central America battlefield, they instantly became a sacred troop where young men

Chapter 646

looked forward to joining.

Apparently, Conor was excited to join the Sword Camp as well.

And when others mentioned its name, he even proudly lifted his head up.

As he was being introduced, he greeted politely.

But when his gaze roamed past Mandy, an evil glint appeared in his eyes.

This pair of sisters were such eye-candies!

Telegram @chinesenovels

Chapter 647

Chapter 647

“Uncle, Auntie and Sister Mandy, from now onward if you face any problems you can find me whenever you want. I will help you settle them all,” Conor Ward said confidently with a smile on his face.

Leyton Luv nodded his head in agreement. “Old Zimmer, this kid has great potential and would definitely be a mighty general in the armed forces, it won’t be surprising if he gets promoted to greater positions!”

Tanya Yates chuckled. “How could any of those people whom I fancied ever be lacking?”

“He’s entering the Sword Camp led by Ethan Hunt, once he really gets selected, he would be one of Lieutenant Colonel Ethan’s people from then onward!”

“Do you all actually know who Ethan Hunt is?”

Chapter 647

Simon who knew about it immediately replied, “Ethan Hunt is the Lieutenant Colonel of the Sword Army, and is even the leader of South Lights’ Four Gods of War. Rumor has it that he’s on the same level as the first-in-command of South Lights!”

“Mm... It seems that you and your family still have some knowledge in this. Can you even imagine how Conor’s future would be once he becomes one of Ethan Hunt’s underlings!” Tanya grinned widely.

Simon and Lilian both simultaneously threw a glance at Harvey before looking at each other, seeing the frustration deep in each other’s eyes.

After that, the couple laughed. “Conor really has a great future ahead of him!”

Although that’s what they said, Simon and Lilian both tasted bitterness in their own mouths, how could the difference be so big when the two of them were both men?

“Of course, he’s not someone that can be compared

Chapter 647

with your live-in son-in-law!” Leyton laughed.

Simon had a change of expression on his face and replied, “Brother-in-law, don’t even joke about it, how will I not know my son-in-law’s capabilities? He’s nothing!”

“Dad! Godfather! You’re speaking nonsense! My brother-in-law is the most incredible man!”

Xynthia Zimmer became unsettled as she inched closer toward Harvey with admiration in her eyes.

Conor who was enjoying everyone’s compliments initially, immediately felt anger arose inside him.

From the first time he ever set his eyes on Xynthia, he had fallen for this girl, the only reason why Leyton and Tanya invited him to meet Simon and Lilian was to set their marriage matter right.

Who would have thought that Xynthia didn’t like him at all, and never even smiled or acted friendly towards him?

And even now she was actually admiring a live-in

Chapter 647

son-in-law, how could he not be mad?

“Xynthia, you’re being fooled by him aren’t you? You really think he is capable at all? He’s nothing but a piece of trash!” Leyton mocked Harvey directly without mercy.

“Yes, yes, how can Conor be compared with someone like Harvey?”

Even Simon and Lilian chuckled and spoke up.

Now that even Simon and Lilian agreed on it, that simply meant even if Harvey wasn’t really a piece of trash, he had to be one!

Moreover, he was indeed nothing but a piece of garbage!

Xynthia instantly wanted to fight back, but Harvey patted her hand to signal her not to say anything more.

And this intimate scene was spotted by Conor.

At that moment, Conor was so furious that he

Chapter 647

gritted his teeth hard with fumes rising from his body.

However, he's still someone notable after all, he suppressed his emotions not long after and smiled. "Uncle Leyton, Aunt Tanya, it will be our entrance examination the day after tomorrow, I hope to invite you to come along and check it out..."

"If you're lucky enough, you might even get to meet Lieutenant Colonel Ethan himself!"

"Once you get acquainted with him, whenever you face some problems which are officials-related after that, everything will be solved with just a phone call!"

For the Sword Camp entrance examination, the participants were allowed to bring their family members along, and Conor planned to bring his parents with him initially.

But now he actually extended this opportunity to Tanya and Leyton.

"Oh yeah, I've gotten the news that Prince York

Chapter 647

who hasn't appeared for a long time will be attending this event as well..."

"What?"

Everyone there was astonished, Prince York would be attending too? What's all this?

Telegram @chinesenovels

Chapter 648

Chapter 648

Taking in everyone's surprised looks, Conor Ward continued gleefully, "All of you might not know about this, do you? Prince York is actually the crownless King of South Light!

"This is a major secret, anyone who's not in the army won't know about this!

"Legend has it that back when the Sword Camp travelled far to Central America to battle against America, Prince York as the leader of a thousand soldiers in that war holding out against tens of thousands of enemies, and led the Sword Camp to wipe out the American Delta Force! ①

"So even though Prince York is not someone in the armed forces, his status and power in South Light is unimaginable to normal people!

"For me, I only had the right to know about this

Chapter 648

because I'm entering the entrance examination! No outsiders will ever know about this!" ①

"What is more, I heard that it has been three years since Prince York has attended the Sword Camp's entrance examination, which is why he'll probably attend this time!"

Conor had a look of admiration on his face, although someone as great as the Prince York wasn't someone in the armed forces, his achievements in the army was too extraordinary which made him the crownless king of the South Light's forces.

All of the South Light's armies, especially those from the Sword Camp, treated him as the God of the armed forces!

Before this, Conor only knew there was a great man on the Central America battlefield who became the idol of many soldiers. But it was only until recently when he's in the South Light's army camp he accidentally got the news that the legendary Prince York was none other than his own idol.

Chapter 648

And now, his wish was going to come true, how could he not be excited about it?

“What? Is that true? Not only can we see Lieutenant Colonel Ethan but also the legendary Prince York?!”

Leyton and Tanya both got excited till they nearly stood up.

They both belong to the older generation of the South Light and have experienced the era of Prince York before, that's why they clearly knew the weight of those two words. ①

The key thing was Prince York had always been acting mysterious, if they got to see his true face, it would be the most honorable thing ever!

“Yes! Of course you'll be seeing him there!”

Conor exclaimed proudly.

“However, the Sword Camp set a rule that a soldier can only bring three family members to the entrance examination ceremony, will sister Xynthia

Chapter 648

be joining us?”

After his sentence, Conor turned his gaze towards Xynthia and had a look of immense satisfaction on his face.

“Of course, we’ll definitely be going then! That’s great!”

“If I have the honour to get to know Prince York, from then onward I’ll be able to stand straight whilst walking amongst the Yates family!”

Even Tanya seemed as if she’s a young girl who’s about to meet her idol.

Prince York was simply a legend in South Light, a king and a god too.

“I’m so jealous of you! We won’t even have the chance to know Prince York in this life and next one too!”

Simon and Lilian both felt so jealous of it, they too were yearning and hoping to get to know Prince York. It was a pity that they would never have the

Chapter 648

chance.

Mandy on the other hand felt indifferent. Perhaps it was because Harvey had always boasted that he was Prince York himself, so she didn't think highly of Prince York any longer.

Tanya looked down proudly on her sister at that moment and said, "Big Sister, I've told you not to simply get married to anyone, haven't I? But you never listened.

"Now it wouldn't be as easy if I want you to tag along with me anymore!

"What a good chance to get to know Prince York!

"It's a shame that this kind of entrance examination ceremony is not just for anyone to attend!"

Leyton added, "Maybe if we get to know Prince York by then, we can introduce you all to him?"

Although there were rumors that Mandy was the secret lover of Prince York, Leyton and Tanya would

Chapter 648

never believe it.

How could she, Mandy Zimmer, even have a right to be that?

Outsiders also didn't know much about how the Yorks brought betrothal gifts to the Zimmer family.

At that moment, Harvey suddenly spoke up, "It's only an entrance examination, isn't it? If we want to participate, we can attend anytime we like, it's just that we're not really interested in this meaningless event."

Harvey's tone was so casual that they made such stark contrast with his shocking words.

His statement made everyone turn speechless in a blink of an eye!

Chapter 649

Chapter 649

Everyone was looking at the direction where Harvey York was.

Even Mandy Zimmer furrowed her eyebrows.

In her eyes, Harvey always enjoyed bluffing and this trait of him simply boasting about anything wasn't something that could be corrected in this life of his anymore.

"Pfft!" Conor Ward burst out laughing out of the blue. "Ha ha ha ha... What did you just say? You can attend the entrance examination anytime you like? Who do you think you are?"

"I'm going to laugh till I die!"

"Didn't you know about this?"

"There are only certain people who are qualified to

Chapter 649

participate in this entrance examination. Only the best ten soldiers of every army district have the chance to attend!

“Only among these selected people can bring three family members to attend this event!

“A mere live-in son-in-law and a garbage like you even wish to join?”

Harvey shrugged casually, “Yeah, you were also informed that you can bring up to three family members?”

“Besides, this time I’m specifically invited by someone to attend the event. It can even be said that if I’m not present, there won’t even be a need to carry out this entrance examination!”

Leyton Luv and Tanya Yates’ faces immediately had a change of expression as they looked at Harvey in fury.

At the same time, even Simon Zimmer and Lilian Yates’ faces darkened.

Chapter 649

Mandy lowered her head wishing she could find a hole to bury herself inside!

How outrageous could he be?!

The entrance examination couldn't be conducted if it wasn't for him?

Not only others, even she herself wouldn't believe it!

At that time, even Xynthia Zimmer thought Harvey bluffed a bit too much!

She felt ashamed and awkward for Harvey.

Conor snickered loudly and exclaimed, "What a joke!

"You're actually saying that it can't be conducted without you? Do you think you're Lieutenant Colonel Ethan or Prince York?"

Tanya looked at Lilian and her husband incredulously and said, "Big Sister, it's not that I

Chapter 649

want to insult you, but your family's ways are simply worrying!

“Even I feel ashamed for you all!

“If you guys aren't embarrassed of it, we feel embarrassed!”

Simon became awkward as he landed his furious gaze onto Harvey and scolded, “What did I say to you last night? Didn't I tell you? Just to have a nice meal today?! Can you stop sputtering more nonsense?!”

“Now look what happened? You're bluffing and boasting so much without a care in the world! You never show any respect toward me!

“If I had known about this, I definitely wouldn't bring you here! Always making us all ashamed!”

Lilian glared fiercely at Harvey.

Harvey replied casually, “Say whatever you want. I'm attending the entrance examination anyway.”

Bang!

Chapter 649

Leyton slammed his right hand onto the table hard and bellowed, “Simon! Is this how your family acts?!”

“Your live-in son-in-law doesn’t even have any knowledge on this? Does he even respect us, the older generation?”

Tanya sneered and added, “Big Sister, now that your son-in-law is so remarkable, we shouldn’t even have a meal together with you!”

“Your family is so esteemed that we would never be able to reach your level! Let’s go, we’re not eating anymore!”

“Trying to act all high and mighty in front of the Yates family? Ha!”

Who would’ve thought that this meetup would end like this!

This gathering was originally intended to be something that everyone would enjoy, but everyone parted ways in disdain now.

Chapter 649

Simon and Lilian were both taken aback!

They wanted to use this chance to better their relationship with Lilian's family.

Through the help of her younger sister.

No one would expect that this matter got ruined by Harvey, wouldn't they?

At that moment, everyone's faces were sad and blue as if they all fell into an icehouse!

"Xynthia, go and persuade your godparents so that they would not be angry anymore!"

"We made a mistake tonight, we'll go apologise when their anger subsides!"

Simon and Lilian were horrified, what would happen if the Yates family got mad?

"Okay, you can count on me!"

Xynthia knew this was a serious matter too.

After that, she had a puzzled expression on her face.

Chapter 649

Meanwhile, Conor leaned on the doorframe and stared at Harvey coldly. “I hope to see you at the entrance examination the day after tomorrow.”

Telegram @chinesenovels

Chapter 650

Chapter 650

After stating his expectation, Conor Ward left the hall arrogantly.

Leaving Simon Zimmer and the rest to look at each other not knowing what to do.

Lilian Yates spoke up helplessly, “The Yates family and Wards are both esteemed families with strict family traditions, they would never be able to stand people like this! It would be weird if they didn’t get mad!”

Simon gave a death stare to Harvey York and bellowed, “You piece of trash, not only you can’t do anything to help us, you even ruined our plan and embarrassed us in different ways!

“I wish I could kill you with a big slap!”

Smack!

Chapter 650

After ending his lecture, Simon tried to slap him.

Instead, Mandy Zimmer swiftly blocked the slap. If it wasn't for her, this slap would've landed on Harvey's face.

“Dad, Mom, this is not something serious. After two days when uncle and aunt's rage subside we'll apologise to them!”

Mandy persuaded.

“Not something serious? Because of him, we have embarrassed ourselves in front of the Yates family!

“Moreover, now that we're living so arduously in the Zimmer family, we wanted to improve our relations with the Yates family using this opportunity!”

“And now what?! You, Harvey York, are trying to force us to death, aren't you?”

Lilian yelled as she pointed her finger toward Harvey's nose.

Chapter 650

Harvey replied helplessly, “Dad, Mom, I’m not lying to you. I really am attending the entrance examination!”

“This is not about you getting to attend or not!

“The issue is you embarrassed us! And that we have offended them!

“So what if you attended the event? Who do you think you are? Prince York?

“You’re still a piece of trash!”

Simon howled furiously.

Lilian added angrily, “Yes, you can attend the event! But who are you depending on? You’re using your wife to attend it after all!

“You know what they are calling you outside?

“They’re calling Mandy as Prince York’s secret lover!

“And you’re nothing but a wittol who uses his wife

Chapter 650

to get close to big shots!

“And you’re still proud of it?!”

“How shameless can you be!”

Harvey became speechless for a moment and didn’t know whether to cry or laugh. Why was he being a wittol to himself again?

How could he ever explain himself?

Mandy changed her facial expression as she was afraid that Harvey would think of doing something absurd. She quickly dragged Harvey along and left.

If this carried on further, her parents would be forcing them to get a divorce again.

The next afternoon, Xynthia Zimmer made a call to Simon.

She said that her godparents were not as angry anymore, but they insisted Harvey to apologise to them face-to-face.

But all those had to be left till the end of the

Chapter 650

entrance examination, they didn't even have the time to bother with a piece of trash like Harvey.

Hearing this, Simon let out a sigh of relief.

At the same time, he ordered Harvey to apologise to Leyton Luv and Tanya Yates face-to-face, or else he would have to divorce Mandy.

Harvey gave him his word.

On the next day.

It was the day of the Sword Camp's entrance examination.

Ethan Hunt gave Harvey a call early in the morning, saying that he wanted to fetch him out of courtesy.

Harvey tried once again and asked Simon and the rest whether they wanted to observe the Sword Camp's entrance examination with him.

In the end, he got scolded all over again.

Chapter 650

Even Mandy couldn't help but scold Harvey for a while and asked him not to spout nonsense anymore.

On the other hand.

The South Light army camp had specifically sent someone over to fetch Conor Ward. Indeed, he had a big reputation in Golden Sands and the South Light's army had high expectations toward him, thinking he would enrol into the Sword Camp.

Xynthia, Leyton and Tanya all followed along inside the car.

Even Tanya, who's from a distinguished family, felt excited.

After all, it was such an honour to have someone from the army to actually come over and fetch them!

Chapter 651

Chapter 651

In the car, the sergeant who was driving was also from the military of South Light. At the moment, he smiled and said, "Brother Ward, you're very lucky!

"The Sword Camp rarely recruited people over the years and very few people have been able to enroll in the past three years.

"I heard that Lieutenant Colonel Ethan decided to recruit more people because of Prince York's return to Buckwood.

"This time, not only you can meet Lieutenant Colonel Ethan, but it is said that he had gone to fetch Prince York himself early in the morning.

"Prince York, he's the true crownless King of our South Light army!

"It's such a great honor for you to be able to meet

Chapter 651

him!”

Conor Ward was also excited at this moment.

Prince York, the legendary figure in the South Light army.

Although people who could achieve victory in purgatory such as the Central American battlefield weren't the Gods of War in the army, but still they were the idols of many sergeants.

“Yeah, previously I didn't know that the legendary figure who defeated the American Delta Force was Prince York!

“I never thought that I could actually meet Prince York today!”

Conor was feeling quite emotional at the moment. He felt that he was in the prime of his life.

“That's because you're capable. Many military officers thought that you can surely join the Sword Camp.

“Otherwise, we won't let an outsider know that the

Chapter 651

legendary figure is Prince York.”

The sergeant in front nodded with a smile.

Tanya Yates who was sitting in the back seat also smiled at this moment. “Conor, this is also because you’re remarkable. Otherwise, how can we have the chance to have a glimpse of Prince York’s face in person?”

Conor straightened his back immediately, feeling complacent after hearing these words.

However, his face became a little sullen when he looked at Xynthia Zimmer who was seated beside him.

He initially wanted to show off a little in front of Xynthia so that she would admire him and even fall in love with him.

But in the end...

Xynthia was calm and a little distracted and others not knowing what she was going through her mind

Conor’s face darkened while watching this scene.

Chapter 651

This girl, would she not be thinking about the live-in son-in-law?

What's so good about that guy?

Leyton Luv and Tanya Yates also noticed that the atmosphere in the car was out of sorts. They quickly changed to new topics to talk about. If not, the atmosphere in the car would be too awkward.

After driving for more than an hour, they finally arrived at the training base of the Sword Camp.

This place was heavily guarded, and there were sergeants with live ammunition everywhere.

Each of these sergeants carried long swords, with a bit of ancient aura.

However, those people were all familiar with the use of firearms, not as what the outside world presumed, that the Sword Camp only used knives.

Soon, the sergeants and their family members who came to participate in the assessment were all

Chapter 651

arranged to gather in a clearing.

This time, a total of one hundred people were able to participate in the assessment.

Those one hundred people were the top figures among the recruits in all major military regions.

Nonetheless, once they came to the Sword Camp, everyone was like a rookie, looking around with a blank expression.

Someone on the side reminded him at this moment. "Speak less and observe more in this place. Don't overestimate yourself. Those who stood here, who isn't the King of Arms?"

"Yeah, the so-called "King of Arms", there are many of them in the Sword Camp, people might not show interest in him!"

"It is said that there were some self-righteous idiots who came to the Sword Camp to mess around while they were enrolled in the army. In the end, they were thrown out and removed from the army.

Chapter 651

They were expelled...”

The people all around were tsking. Apparently, they had their own fantasies and were full of expectations of this legendary army.

At this moment, even Conor who was insufferably arrogant was whipped up.

He could not help it. There were too many aces here.

Telegram @chinesenovels

Chapter 652

Chapter 652

As for Leyton Luv, Tanya Yates, and the others, they had seen a lot since they all came from big families.

However, they still trembled a little in this cut-throat place.

Nonetheless, they were still very excited.

This was because those who could get in and out of this place were either the best in the army or their accompanying relatives.

Those relatives, some were officers, some worked in the military, some were doing business.

Although they had different identities, each of those people has a powerful background. Some of them often appeared on TV and in newspapers.

Such characters were remarkable. There were too

Chapter 652

many benefits in knowing a few of them.

“All sergeants move forward, the rest of the family members come here!”

The crowd at the scene was split into two groups. The disorderly and invincible sergeants were all asked to come forward at the moment and were queuing in line.

The family members came to the spectator's area to sit down.

Leyton and Tanya were very excited looking at the big shots seated beside them.

However, Tanya suddenly thought of something. She then began to look in the surrounding crowd.

Tanya sneered after taking a good look around, “That Harvey surely came here to be funny.”

“Trash!”

“Didn't he say that he was coming? Where is he? Why can't I find him?”

Chapter 652

“Honey, how can you believe in that trash’s words? I certainly don’t take him seriously.” Leyton sneered.

He then counseled, “Xynthia, stop hanging out with such people in the future. Instead, you should get closer to Conor Ward. He will be the big shot in the future. This is for your good.”

Xynthia replied nonchalantly and started scanning for Harvey all over.

She unconsciously felt that her brother-in-law was very powerful and would not lie to her. He would surely come. However, she could not find him amongst the crowd.

Among the sergeants lined up in front, Conor had looked around for a long time and he did not find Harvey at all.

He was sneering in his heart again and again at this moment. Trash was indeed trash. What else could he do other than just to brag?

Chapter 652

“Quiet! Lieutenant Colonel Ethan is coming!”

At the front, a sergeant wearing a commander uniform spoke sternly.

Suddenly, the surrounding area fell silent.

Everyone was waiting with bated breath.

Soon after, a military off-road vehicle drove in.

When the sergeant at the gate saw the car, he immediately stood up and saluted.

All the sergeants watched this off-road vehicle come to the field with admiration.

The crowd clamored at this moment. “Prince York is here!”

Both Leyton and Tanya’s bodies instantly tensed up. They were observing the off-road vehicle closely.

The car door opened and a young man in military uniform got off from the off-road vehicle.

Chapter 652

There was a rusty sword hanging around his waist. It was the Lieutenant Colonel of the Sword Camp, Ethan Hunt.

When the soldiers saw him, they all showed fanatical admiration.

He was the top among the Four Gods of War of the South Light military region!

A person who was on a par with the first-in-command of South Light Province!

Those family members gasped when they saw this scene.

So domineering and so young!

Ethan Hunt, known as Lieutenant Colonel Ethan, his potential was limitless.

At the same time, everyone got their attention back toward the back seat of the off-road vehicle.

This was because since Ethan had already gotten

Chapter 652

off, the legendary Prince York should appear next.

Prince York was too mysterious. Even after so many years, none of his photos were leaked, and very few people had witnessed him in person.

What an honor this was having the chance to see Prince York today!

It could certainly bring honor and prestige to their families!

It was a pity that it had let them down.

The person in the off-road vehicle did not intend to get off. ①

Chapter 653

Chapter 653

Ethan Hunt walked to the front of the crowd and said indifferently, “First of all, welcome to the Sword Camp assessment.”

“Secondly, I would like to clarify one matter. Prince York is in the car.”

“However, Prince York’s status is too valuable. He’s not someone ordinary people could meet with.”

Everyone felt a little regretful after hearing this. The legendary Prince York was just one step away, but they were not qualified to witness his face. 1

Even Conor Ward’s face turned pale in an instant.

“However, Prince York is the legend of the Sword Camp. Without him, we wouldn’t have the prestige we have now, so...”

“Prince York will meet the sergeants who

Chapter 653

participated in the assessment later on.”

Ethan added.

All the sergeants, including Conor, were full of enthusiasm after hearing that.

They were finally able to meet the legendary figure!

Prince York could run the military, the streets, and even the business market!

To meet such a big shot, one must have offered high quality incense in his previous life.

Those family members were very regretful. They looked at the off-road vehicle unwillingly. They widened their eyes and tried to see exactly what Prince York looked like.

Leyton and Tanya also tried their best to look over.

Xynthia was also very curious about Prince York. At this moment, she squinted her eyes carefully.

While she was looking at the figure, suddenly, she

Chapter 653

instinctively said, “Why do I feel that the person inside is Brother-in-law?”

Tanya initially did not figure out anything. However, she looked at it carefully again after listening to Xynthia’s words. She then said, “He did seem to resemble a bit like that trash!”

Leyton also tried to widen his eyes. He was surprised and said after a moment, “It truly looks a bit like him. Although I can’t see it clearly, that side profile certainly looks like him.”

The three of them looked at each other and exchanged doubtful glances.

Could it be that Harvey was the legendary Prince York?

Nonetheless, this thought was quickly overruled by them.

How could someone grand like Prince York be someone else’s live-in son-in-law?

That kind of a big shot certainly had a lot of wives

Chapter 653

and concubines. How could he get caught up with the words “live-in son-in-law”?

Moreover, coupled with his temperament, Harvey did not look like a prince even if he was wearing the emperor’s robe. How could he be Prince York?

Soon, the assessment ceremony was over.

Next was the real assessment.

This was something that the family members could not see because it involved confidential information of the military.

When Leyton and Tanya were about to leave, they also got to meet with Ethan as they wished.

Sure enough, this was Harvey’s order. He asked Ethan to get to know Xynthia which was to help her, just in case this little sister-in-law was cornered too tightly.

However, Leyton and Tanya mistakenly thought that Ethan came to know them because of Conor Ward.

Chapter 653

They became more gratified with Conor at this moment.

If there was such a person as their son-in-law, they would certainly wake up from their dreams in the future.

Tanya's status in the Yates family would certainly rise.

After the family members left, all the sergeants who came to participate in the assessment gathered together again and stood in line.

Conor and others were very excited.

This was because they were qualified to meet the legendary Prince York.

At this moment, Harvey who was inside the off-road vehicle walked out under the escort of four sergeants of the Sword Camp.

Conor stood at the back among the troop. Thus, his view was not very clear.

Chapter 653

Nonetheless, he tried hard to look forward, only to see a person's back.

“This person, why does he look a bit like that live-in son-in-law...”

Conor frowned slightly and mumbled to himself.

Telegram @chinesenovels

Chapter 654

Chapter 654

Soon, Harvey York and Ethan Hunt stood at the forefront of the troop together.

Ethan deliberately stepped back a little from where he was standing, which showed that the man in casual clothes next to him had a higher status.

At this moment, Ethan smiled and said while looking at the sergeants in front of him, "Prince York, the newcomers for this time have assembled. Next, according to the Sword Camp's rules, they will undergo special training for seven days and seven nights, thereby, selecting suitable people..."

"However, this is the usual rule. Since you're here to guide them this time, your words shall prevail."

Ethan's words showed that the man next to him was the legendary Prince York.

Chapter 654

Harvey looked at the sergeant in front of him, smiled, and said, "I'm not a military brat. But Lieutenant Colonel Ethan invited me to guide you today. Do you have any comments?"

"It's a great honor!"

The group of sergeants spoke in unison!

Although Harvey was not a military brat, he was the crownless king of the South Light army!

They were very lucky to be able to get his guidance.

Meanwhile, all of those sergeants were holding their breath. They were very excited looking to the front, looking at Prince York who was within arm's reach.

This man who led the Sword Camp to create an almost impossible record was the Army Saint of South Light!

He was the idol of most sergeants in South Light.

At this moment, Conor Ward who was in the back

Chapter 654

row finally saw Harvey's face.

His face suddenly changed drastically at this moment!

'He, he, he!

'He's the legendary Prince York?!

After confirming it again and finding out that he was not mistaken, he felt dizzy and something lit up in his mind.

It turned out...

Harvey York was Prince York!

No wonder he said that he could come to this enlistment assessment whenever he wanted...

No wonder he said that this enlistment assessment could not be conducted before he came...

Conor felt his blood coursing through all over his body. His throat became sensitive at this moment, and he was so scared that he was about to vomit

Chapter 654

blood.

Just when he was looking at Harvey, Harvey's eyes fell on him casually and their eyes were locked in a gaze.

He saw Harvey looking down at him as if he was a king, a god.

Conor could only see complete darkness ahead at this moment.

He could no longer withstand this invisible pressure.

Pffft...

A mouthful of blood was spurted out and then Conor's vision went blank and passed out.

Everyone present was a little dumbfounded at this moment.

Being able to participate in the enlistment assessment of the Sword Camp, who was not the best of the best in the army?

Chapter 654

It was true that everyone was very excited but to such a degree?

Harvey's expression changed. He said, "Lieutenant Colonel Ethan, this is the person you chose? How can he enter the Sword Camp when he has such a frail body?"

Ethan's face also slightly changed. He had been showing great diligence at the Sword Camp those years and he carefully selected everyone who entered the Sword Camp.

Although there were hundreds of people who took part in the assessment every year, no more than ten would be able to enter the Sword Camp.

However, this was the first time he encountered such a situation. Someone directly fainted at the assessment ceremony even before taking part in the actual assessment.

Whether it was because of this, be it psychological or physical; in short, they could not take such a

Chapter 654

sergeant.

Someone quickly reported the next moment. “Prince York, Lieutenant Colonel, this is Conor Ward from the Golden Sands military region.”

Ethan’s face slightly changed. He then yelled in the next moment, “How can such a person pass the selection?! Send him back!

“Moreover, tell him that if he dares to reveal Prince York’s true identity. I’m going to make his life a mess!”

“Yes!”

Soon, a sergeant from the Sword Camp carried Conor down.

After that, Harvey gave a few words of inspiration to the sergeants who had come to participate in the enlistment assessment and left.

At night, as Harvey reached back home, Simon Zimmer and Lilian Yates called him and Mandy Zimmer over.

Chapter 655

Chapter 655

“Your aunt and uncle are in a good mood today. They said they can accept your apology, so you should prepare.” Simon Zimmer said.

“Okay, then let’s invite the elders to a meal.” Harvey York said.

Soon, they booked a room at the Kingdom Palace. ①

Tanya Yates and Leyton Luv came in the evening, and Xynthia Zimmer was with them.

Both Tanya and Leyton were flushed with pleasure. They looked indescribably happy as if they had won several million dollars.

When they saw Simon and his wife at this moment, they were smiling very politely.

“Sister, Brother-in-law, what makes you so happy?”

Chapter 655

Tell us, so we can be happy for you too!” Lilian said with a smile.

Tanya proudly said, “Thanks to Conor Ward, the good boy today!

“Not only did we go to participate in the enlistment assessment of the Sword Camp, but we also met Lieutenant Colonel Ethan!

“Most importantly, we get to see Prince York’s face!”

Although it was just his profile... However, Tanya’s words were not humbug.

Xynthia who was on the side nodded in agreement, indicating that it was true.

“Really? You met Lieutenant Colonel Ethan! It is said that he’s on par with the first-in-command of South Light Province!” Simon responded in excitement.

He had been in Buckwood for many years and had also dreamt of having an opportunity to meet those

Chapter 655

big shots.

Unfortunately, everything stopped at fantasies.

Leyton cleared his throat and said calmly, "Yes. Lieutenant Colonel Ethan seems to know us. He actually came over to greet Xynthia and said that she could find him for anything in the future."

"What? Lieutenant Colonel Ethan knew who you are? And he was being so enthusiastic?"

Simon and Lilian glanced at each other in amazement, with a hint of envy.

Tanya explained with a smile, "It's normal. They must have information about Conor and us!"

"In my opinion, Conor, this kid is truly amazing! Lieutenant Colonel Ethan must have thought that he would be promising in the future. That's why he can't help making friends with us! We are all in his good books today!"

Tanya spoke affirmatively.

"Hey, it's a pity that the two of you didn't go.

Chapter 655

Otherwise, I will surely introduce you to Lieutenant Colonel Ethan!” Leyton said with a smile.

Simon and Lilian were green with envy when he said this.

Although Xynthia was their daughter, Conor only came into the picture because of the Yateses.

They could not be envious of this.

“Since we’re in a good mood and have good luck today, you can come to me for anything in the future. I will solve it for you!” Leyton said.

“Thank you, Brother-in-law! Thank you, Brother-in-law!”

Both Simon and Lilian nodded and thanked them.

They had not been doing well in the Zimmer family recently. Now that they had the opportunity to ease the relationship with the Zimmer family, they could not really ask for it.

Leyton smiled for a while, his eyes then fell onto

Chapter 655

Harvey and said, "But, case by case. If you want us to help you, this trash has to apologize first!"

"Yes! Apologize, if he doesn't apologize, we won't accept your family!" Tanya was also determined.

This trash lied to them, saying that he could go to the ceremony of the enlistment assessment.

It seemed that not only he was trash, but also a liar!

Xynthia was very conflicted. She then cautiously said, "Brother-in-law, Godfather, and Godmother are such people, please don't mind them..."

"Well, hurry up and apologize to Aunt and Uncle!" Simon urged.

Harvey glanced at Mandy Zimmer who was discomfited. He then smiled and said, "Aunt, Uncle, I was wrong yesterday, I shouldn't run into you..."

Chapter 656

Chapter 656

“Forget it, I’m in a good mood today. I’ll just forgive you!” Tanya waved her hand and looked restless.

Leyton suddenly thought of something. He then asked, “By the way, didn’t you say that you’re going to participate in the enlistment assessment of the Sword Camp today? Why didn’t we see you?!”

She also thought of this when he heard Leyton’s words. She looked at Harvey cheekily.

They wanted to see what else the live-in son-in-law could say.

In their view, Harvey should give himself two slaps in the face right now and back down.

Unexpectedly, Harvey hesitated for a while and decided to tell the truth.

Chapter 656

“Truth be told, I did go today, but you aren’t qualified to see me.” ①

The whole place fell deathly silent when he said this.

Leyton and Tanya almost blew in a fit of rage!

What did he mean that they weren’t qualified to see him?

This live-in son-in-law certainly took their words seriously and was so narcissistic.

They only stared at Harvey at this moment, wishing to kill him.

Simon Zimmer and Lilian Yates were even more frightened.

Just as the relationship between the two parties was about to ease down after some effort, now this live-in son-in-law was talking nonsense again.

This guy, he truly could not do anything right!

Chapter 656

Even Mandy was dumbstruck!

She never thought that Harvey could say such a thing.

Just when Simon and others were about to go crazy, all of a sudden, Tanya and Leyton's driver pushed open the door of the room and nervously said, "Sir, Lady, something's wrong!

"Young Master Conor Ward was sent back by people from the South Light military region!

"They said that Young Master Conor was in poor health and he fainted during the enlistment assessment ceremony!

"He's not eligible to participate in the enlistment assessment of the Sword Camp!"

Tanya and Leyton's faces drastically changed the moment they heard the news.

At this moment, they did not bother to mess around with Harvey, instead, all of them stood up

Chapter 656

immediately.

“What happened?”

“Poor health? Not eligible to participate in the enlistment assessment? What farce is this!”

“Where did you hear the news? Could it be a mistake?”

Both of them could not believe it at this moment.

Conor came from a wealthy family, the Ward family in Golden Sands. He had received elite education from the nobles since childhood.

They were strong whether it was in terms of strength, foundation, or background.

How could he not be eligible to participate in the enlistment assessment?

The driver's face turned pale and said, “Sir, Lady, the military region has sent people over. They mentioned that if we refuse to take Young Master Conor Ward in, they would throw him to the

Chapter 656

streets!”

“Hurry up and get him in!”

Tanya’s lips were trembling at the moment regardless of whether it was true or not.

Soon, they saw two sergeants coming in carrying Conor who was unconscious.

“They really sent him back.”

“Is he in a coma?”

“What’s the situation with Conor?”

Tanya hurriedly took out the ginseng slice she carried, stuffed it in Conor’s mouth, and let him drink a big glass of warm water.

Conor finally woke up silently.

Tanya quickly said, “Conor?! What happened? Why did you pass out?”

Conor got up in difficulty. Just when he wanted to speak, he suddenly saw Harvey sitting not too far

Chapter 656

away.

Pffft...

He spurted out another mouthful of blood, and then Conor went unconscious again.

The two sergeants who sent him back sneered and said, "He fainted eight times and spurted blood eight times in a day. How could he participate in the enlistment assessment of the Sword Camp with such frail physique?"

"Hurry up and take him back, or else, it would be troublesome for us if he dies!"

Apparently, the military region only had Tanya and Leyton's contacts, so they sent Conor back here.

Moreover, the people in the military region were also wondering why this guy who was known as the King of Arms of Golden Sands had such poor physique? ②

Chapter 657

Chapter 657

This guy fainted about eight times today.

Every time he woke up, he would immediately vomit blood and pass out again after hearing everyone talk about Prince York's visit to the Sword Camp today.

But, no one talked about Prince York this time and still he fainted again.

His physique was really bad.

Not sure how he held the reputation of being the King of Arms?

Tanya nervously asked the two sergeants who had sent Conor back, "Dear sergeants, I would like to ask, does Conor still have a chance to join the Sword Camp?"

"How can it be?"

Chapter 657

“He fainted in front of Prince York. He truly disgraced the Sword Camp!”

“Lieutenant Colonel got so angry that he directly called the Golden Sands military region and asked why this trash was sent over there.

“I think he won’t ever have a place in the army in the future, let alone the Sword Camp.”

A sergeant stated the cold hard truth.

“However, this guy is truly rubbish. Prince York came to give some guidance for the first time in three years. He actually came to tarnish the Sword Camp’s reputation. He certainly got some nerves!

“Luckily, we’re not from the Sword Camp.

Otherwise, we would have just thrown him on the streets!”

Another sergeant sneered again and again.

The Sword Camp was the strongest army in the South Light military region, If you did not show

Chapter 657

respect to the Sword Camp, that meant you're not showing respect to the South Light military region.

Both Tanya and Leyton broke out a cold sweat at the moment.

Offending Ethan Hunt?

Even offending Prince York?

Even with the Wards and the Yates family could not afford to offend them, let alone Conor Ward.

They were people who had experienced the Prince York's era, and they naturally understood the weight of the two words, Prince York in South Light.

The two sergeants left soon after, both with miserable expressions.

Tanya and Leyton were not even interested in moving the chopsticks while facing the table filled with dishes.

After a while, Conor finally woke up again.

However, something surged within his chest and

Chapter 657

his throat became sensitive once again.

Just when he was about to vomit blood, Harvey quickly said, “No vomiting!”

Conor felt as if he was listening to the imperial decree when he heard Harvey’s words. He trembled and held the mouthful of blood in. He was very terrified at that moment.

His brain was completely blank at that instant.

“This kid, what the hell is going on with him?”

Tanya sighed and said,

“I...I...”

“I saw...Prince York...”

Conor stammered over the words, dripping in a cold sweat, and said.

“It’s good that you get to see Prince York. Then, why did you pass out?”

Both Tanya and Leyton frowned. Could it be that

Chapter 657

Prince York was a scourge? Was he really that horrifying?

“Because Prince York...Prince York... He, he, he...”

Conor stuttered for a long time, looking at Harvey with a little dodge and panic in his eyes.

He wanted to say Harvey's identity. He wanted to say that this live-in son-in-law in front of him was Prince York.

However, he still could not say it out loud.

This was because he woke up briefly before leaving the Sword Camp. Ethan Hunt personally told him that if he dared to reveal Prince York's identity, then he would take the entire Ward family down with him.

Conor fainted again after hearing this.

In truth, if someone else said this, he would certainly sneer at them.

However, it was Lieutenant Colonel Ethan from the

Chapter 657

Sword Camp who said this, he dared not to scoff at the fact that his family would be taken down with him!

Therefore, even if he was panicked to the extreme, he still would not say a word about Prince York's identity.

Nonetheless, everyone else noticed something strange and looked at Harvey with curiosity.

A bold idea popped up in their minds. Was it possible that Harvey was actually Prince York?

Everyone was looking at Conor nervously...

Conor finally got over his nerves after a while.

Chapter 658

Chapter 658

“Prince York is...my idol. He...he...isn't someone that ordinary people could meet with...”

“My physique isn't so good. I fainted the minute I saw him...”

“I'm such a big disappointment...”

Conor Ward felt quite bitter having said all that, but he had to speak like that because he had to think about the safety of his family.

“Oh, I see. I thought you're going to say that trash Harvey was Prince York!”

Tanya let out a long sigh. As long as this live-in son-in-law was not Prince York, then everything was fine.

“Okay. It's okay. Take a good rest first. We'll

Chapter 658

temporarily put aside the Sword Camp...” Leyton Luv comforted him.

However, he was a little curious and spoke after he finished speaking. “By the way, did you see this rubbish in the Sword Camp today?”

“Yes!”

Conor glanced at Harvey with a complicated expression.

“What? This rubbish really went to the Sword Camp?”

Tanya and the others were in disbelief after hearing Conor’s words.

They never thought that Harvey would actually go to participate in the enlistment assessment ceremony.

“Uncle, Aunt, I’m leaving first. I have to go back to rest. Enjoy your meal. I shall leave now.”

With Harvey here, how could Conor even enjoy his

Chapter 658

meal?

He did not even dare to meddle with Xynthia anymore. He just wanted to return to Golden Sands as soon as possible.

South Light was certainly a dangerous place to stay. This place often scared people to death. He would never dare to come here again even if he was beaten to death.

“Well, since you’re tired, let’s go back with you...”
Leyton stood up.

“We won’t eat anymore. Let’s go back!” Tanya said.

Simon Zimmer and Lilian Yates were anxious. “Sister, Brother-in-law, have you forgiven us?”

“Yes!”

“Oh right, you can also come to the Old Lady’s birthday banquet in a few days!”

“The Old Lady has started to practice Buddhism in the past few years. She said that it is best to gather

Chapter 658

all children and grandchildren together. She reluctantly accepts you. You should behave well by then.”

Leyton commanded.

Lilian was very happy upon hearing these words.

It was more than two decades!

She had never returned to her family since she married Simon!

Unexpectedly, she could actually attend the Old Lady's birthday banquet now?

“We will attend that banquet. We'll surely go!”
Simon was also very excited.

They had been doing so badly in the Zimmer family. If they could get involved with the Yates family, they should surely cling onto them tightly.

As they waited until Tanya and the other two had left the place...

Lilian still seemed to be in a good mood. She then

Chapter 658

glanced at Harvey at this moment and said, "This time you're lucky, I'll overlook your shenanigans this time."

"You should go to the Old Lady's birthday banquet too."

Apparently, Tanya said to come together just now, she dared not to impede Harvey from going.

What if the Old Lady asked?

"Serves us right! We both will have the final say with the Zimmer family in the future!" Simon straightened his back at this moment!

"Honey, I have to go out and meet up with a few friends tonight and inquire about the Yates family."

"This is to ensure that we know who we can and can't offend when we attend the banquet later. Just in case, since we really don't have a clue!"

Apparently, Simon had been in Buckwood for many years and should have known a few friends on the streets. Otherwise, he would not say such a thing.

Chapter 658

Lilian slightly frowned and yet she said, "Okay, go and find out comprehensively. But remember, don't gamble!"

Lilian handed Simon a bank card while talking. There was ten million in it and was borrowed by Harvey previously in Niumhi.

Harvey unconsciously glanced at Simon. He heard that his father-in-law seemed to be a famous gambler in Buckwood. This was also one of the reasons why he could not do well in Buckwood.

Harvey had not taken this matter to heart before. However, it seemed that the rumors were confirmed after listening to Lilian's words today.

"Honey, don't worry. I turned over a new leaf a long time ago. I'm fighting for our future this time. I am not going there to mess around..."

Simon patted his chest reassuringly.

Soon after, Simon got together with a group of so-called friends who lived on the streets.

Chapter 658

After drinking for three rounds, a gangster patted on Simon's shoulders and said, "Old man Zimmer, I haven't seen you for quite a long time, let's try our luck. I heard that there's a newly opened spot. All the dealers are beautiful women from casinos!"

Telegram @chinesenovels

Chapter 659

Chapter 659

Simon Zimmer shook his head. “Brothers, all the food and drinks are on me today. As for the gambling thing, just forget it. I just wanted to inquire about something tonight. You guys, please don’t make it any less difficult for me!”

“It’s okay. Just play a few rounds and try your luck. I promise you that you won’t lose...”

A gangster bursted into laughter.

“Why? We have told you what you wanted to ask. Now you’ve changed your colors and you are not showing us some respect?”

“Old man Zimmer! Since you’ve come out to play, why don’t you just have some fun. Who would come out and play with just a million?”

“If you lose, you can just take it as spreading your

Chapter 659

riches around. If you win, you're lucky!"

"Hahahaha..."

Everyone was drunk, and Simon was tempted to gamble anyway.

However, he remained calm and said, "Okay, let's go together. However, I only have tens of thousands of dollars with me. We'll leave after I finish playing ..."

"Okay, okay, okay..."

Soon, a group of people walked into the newly opened venue with their arms around each other's shoulders.

Simon became excited when he came to the place. He really liked this atmosphere. His inner demon came out as soon as he walked in there.

In the VIP room of the venue, a man dressed in a suit with a somewhat delicate looking face, shaking the red wine glass in his hand. He looked at the red-faced gamblers below with a smile on his face. "Is

Chapter 659

Simon Zimmer here?”

“Sir York, we could surely do the things that you’ve ordered. See, he’s right there...”

The person in charge of the venue pointed in a direction and said shyly.

This Sir York was not Quinton York.

He was the elder of the twins of the Yorks, the third son of the Yorks, Wayne York.

Wayne took a sip of red wine and slowly said, “Big Brother, that old man certainly has no brains...”

“I usually wouldn’t take action against a nobody like him. However, since Second Brother gave a direct order, I’ll do it then...”

Wayne looked helpless. People who did not know him thought he was wronged.

In truth, the twins of the Yorks, Wayne York, and Stephen York were both notoriously ruthless characters.

Chapter 659

Although the Famous Four of the Yorks were led by Quinton...

However, if the other three were not capable, how could they be known as the Famous Four of the Yorks?

Quinton York was in charge of all affairs pertaining to the Yorks.

Wayne York ran and controlled the streets.

Stephen York managed the business market.

And as for Queenie York, she was in charge of the military.

In the Yorks, these four had the highest authority, and they had de facto power.

There was a crisp sound of high heels at this moment.

After a while, a woman in professional attire walked in casually.

Chapter 659

When the staff nearby, including the person in charge of the venue saw her, they saluted respectfully.

Queenie gestured to everyone to go out, and then looked at Wayne with interest and said, "Third Brother, are you going to end him yourself?"

"So far, Second Brother has only let his confidant take the necessary action..."

"Aren't you afraid that you would offend Big Brother? Can you afford his wrath?"

Queenie smiled happily, looking so beautiful, but her words were extremely conspicuous.

"Aren't you afraid that Second Brother would set you up? Maybe he wanted to use Big Brother as a mule and get rid of you."

Wayne faintly glanced at Queenie and said, "Temptress, stop confusing people here and stop testing me. No matter what Second Brother wants me to do, I'll do it..."

Chapter 659

“That’s because he is currently the head of the Yorks...”

“Prince York? What a joke! That’s all in the past. The Yorks have gone a long way without needing a prince...”

“It seems that I was right to trust you...”

In the next moment, an indifferent voice came out. He then saw Quinton wearing a suit and walking in slowly.

Telegram @chinesenovels

Chapter 660

Chapter 660

“Second Brother...”

Wayne York glanced at Queenie York and then bowed calmly.

Quinton York glanced at Queenie with a smirk on his face and said faintly, “Third Brother, what’re you going to do?”

Wayne smiled and said, “Of course, I will follow your instructions and explicitly execute what you’ve ordered.”

“Then play with him. Let him lose. Let him lose everything.

“Let him lose until he could not pay off the debt even if it meant to give the entire Zimmer family. I want to see how far our good Big Brother is willing to go for his cheap father-in-law...”

Chapter 660

Quinton said nonchalantly. For him, this was all just a game.

Wayne nodded and said, "Second Brother, don't worry. I will arrange everything and make sure that there wouldn't be any mistakes. Even if the police arrive, they wouldn't be able to find any proof!"

Three of the Famous Four of the Yorks were in the venue tonight.

Simon Zimmer would not have thought that such a nobody like him could actually let so many nobilities observe him in the background.

At this moment, Simon was having so much fun.

He had won several rounds consecutively, at least a dozen times.

He had won millions after the tenth round of stud poker.

The money came too easily. Everything was almost

Chapter 660

like a dream.

Those young gangsters who came with him cheered him loudly. They also encouraged him to bet more and applauded him for his winnings!

“Old man Zimmer, aren't you lucky today? This is the first time that I have seen this kind of person in decades. You're indeed the God of Gamblers!”

“Yes, we can't leave tonight. We should go for a big one this time. Then, we'll be financially free!”

“You're the God of Gamblers of Buckwood!”

At this time, those people in the venue were going crazy.

Simon was convinced that he was now possessed by the god of gambling. He then took a deep breath and went into the zone...

Late at night.

Harvey York and Mandy Zimmer who were fast

Chapter 660

asleep were awakened by the sudden ringing of her mobile phone.

It was from Lilian Yates.

Mandy was a little confused at first. However, she became sobered instantly and almost jumped up when she heard the phone.

“What? How is it possible?”

Mandy’s face turned pale in an instant. She dropped her phone to the ground.

Harvey immediately asked, “What happened?”

Mandy trembled for a while, then shuddered, “Father went to that place and lost a billion. He was found to be cheating too, and now, he is being detained there!”

“A billion? How could it be possible? Just in one night?”

Harvey slightly frowned. He instinctively felt that something fishy was going on.

Chapter 660

Was Simon framed or drugged?

“Where is he?” Harvey quickly asked.

“We don’t know yet. Hurry up and ask my mother ...”

When they came downstairs, Lilian was already crying in tears, as if she had aged ten years overnight.

Harvey drove to the destination after asking for the address from Lilian.

When he arrived at the place, it was a mess and the whole place was smoky.

A few tattooed thugs walked up to Harvey while holding steel pipes in their hands. Then they said coldly, “Who are you?”

Harvey directly said, “We’re here for Simon Zimmer.”

“Oh? Are you the family of that old man who

Chapter 660

cheated? Come!”

The thugs sneered again and again. They reminded Harvey as they guided him to the second floor. “You ’d better be mentally prepared...

“Simon Zimmer, that b*stard, after losing several hundred million in our place, he wanted to cheat and was caught on the spot by us!

“According to the rules, the gambling debt must be doubled and his fingers must be cut off!”

Lilian and Mandy almost cried when they heard those words. ①

Chapter 661

Chapter 661

Soon after, Harvey York and the others were escorted into a large box; there were a few dozen people holding steel pipes and watermelon knives with intimidating looks on their faces.

The smell of blood rushed into people's noses, making them feel nauseated.

There was a man lying on the ground at that moment, his body curled up in a fetal position, twitching incessantly and covered in blood.

“Simon...”

“Father...”

After recognizing the person that was lying on the ground, Mandy Zimmer and Lilian Yates swiftly rushed toward him.

Seeing Simon Zimmer beaten up to this state,

Chapter 661

Harvey had a cold look in his eyes even though he was not too fond of his cheap father-in-law.

‘These people should die for making my wife shed her tears!’

“Save me! Please!” Simon said while trembling and curling up on the ground the moment he saw his family.

He was truly beaten up to a pulp that night, he had never encountered an affair of the sort for a man that had been fed by a silver spoon his whole life.

After seeing the pathetic display of the family, the few dozen fighters had spread out while the sounds of applause accompanied them. In no time they surrounded Harvey and the others.

When the fighters had spread out, a man sitting on a couch was revealed.

He was wearing a white T-shirt, with a big glimmering golden chained necklace hung on his neck with a fearsome expression on his face.

Chapter 661

He spat his tobacco to the ground, then stepped on it a few times and raised his head to look at Harvey and the others.

“You must be Simon Zimmer’s family.”

“Yeah, that’s right. He’s my father-in-law,” Harvey said while looking at him condescendingly.

“Hehehe. So, you’re the infamous live-in son-in-law?!”

“Let me introduce myself. My surname’s Ray, my brothers on the streets gave me the title of Tiger Ray.

“I’m in charge of the turf around here...”

“What are you planning to do?” Harvey asked calmly.

Tiger Ray saw this scene and pointed at Simon on the ground, then coldly exclaimed, “Your father-in-law lost seven million dollars here, then he even cheated in his games!”

Chapter 661

“According to the rules of the place, one of his fingers needs to be gone along with the debt being doubled!”

“But according to us, we’ll forget about what happened if you take him away!”

“If not, you can already imagine what’ll happen to him!” Tiger Ray said coldly while pointing at Harvey.

Lilian and Mandy were trembling in their boots, they had never seen a sight like this.

Simon was terrified after getting beaten up to a pulp, he was curled up in Lilian’s arms and trembled while on the verge of tears.

Harvey on the other hand looked around casually and chuckled.

“Is this place new? People can actually lose seven million here with this capacity? Are you kidding me?”

“Heh, that’s none of your business!”

Chapter 661

“Your father-in-law was a greedy bastard, he already won one million and then he went for a bigger bet. Who else is there to blame?”

“It’s fine if he lost, but he then cheated? He’s looking for his own demise!”

In the middle of his speech, Simon was dragged in front along with a few other people with the wave of Tiger Ray’s hand.

“Come come come, you’re all old friends with Simon here. Tell this filth what happened earlier!”

“We follow the rules in this place, don’t say that we’re taking advantage of you later!” Tiger Ray said with a huge grin on his face.

At the same time, Simon’s friends had started to talk almost immediately.

“Yeah, that’s right!”

“Everyone agreed upon making small bets. When he had won a few thousand dollars, we told him, ‘

Chapter 661

Let's leave! Let's go right now!' but..."

"But he wouldn't listen, he thought he was the God of Gambling. He wanted to win millions even though he had only won thousands!"

"Serves him right!"

"He even cheated!"

"You're a harm to us all! Why are we even friends with people like you?!"

Telegram @chinesenovels

Chapter 662

Chapter 662

Simon Zimmer had froze after listening to the “friends” accusing him of such things, he stared at the gang of scoundrels in astonishment.

“You all framed me! You planned this all along!” scolded Simon.

“Did we force you? Did we even tell you to come?”

“You were doing this on your own will from the beginning!”

“Did we even do so much as to touch you from beginning till the end?”

Simon went dead silent.

Just as the scoundrels he called friends said, he willingly did everything. Nobody could force him.

Only his greed was to blame!

Chapter 662

Mandy Zimmer had understood the situation, this was a thorough frame-up.

She thought for a while and whispered to Harvey York, "Should we call the police?"

"No, it's no use. They might do something out of desperation!" Harvey reasoned calmly.

Tiger Ray heard what the two were talking about and gave a cold chuckle.

"You wanna call the cops? Sure! Do as you like!

"All the money he owed and borrowed from other people, everything was written in black and white...

"He even took out the Zimmers' properties and stock certificates as a collateral, we went through legal procedures too!

"We'd be delighted if you'd actually call the cops! It would make our jobs easier too!

"The cops will always protect good citizens like us!"

Chapter 662

Everyone was looking at Simon with doubt.

Simon's face was as pale as a ghost, but he still nodded his head.

He did use the Zimmers' assets such as properties, stocks, and houses among other things as a collateral.

He even snuck into the Zimmer Villa just to steal the documents for this incident.

He did this because he had lost all of the money to the point where he wanted to overturn his losses with them.

Who knew that he'd lose seven million dollars in a flash, and he had to pay double because they caught him cheating?

"Please don't let Senior Zimmer know of this. If he knew that I used the Zimmers' properties as collateral, he could kill us all!" Simon said immediately.

He then instantly came back to his senses and

Chapter 662

continued talking.

“It’s them! They have professionals that accompanied me to the Zimmer Villa. That’s how I could successfully take the things...”

Tiger Ray coldly laughed and said, “You think saying this will help you? Do you have any proof?”

“Alright, stop spouting nonsense. Are you calling the cops or what? Make your choice!”

Even Mandy was dumbfounded.

Harvey’s face had turned as dark as night.

Everyone were not idiots, they could obviously see at that point that they were being targeted, everything was neatly orchestrated.

“Have you made up your mind?” Tiger Ray coldly asked.

“We... We’re not calling the police!”

“We’ll pay you back, but we can’t even get this

Chapter 662

much money in the middle of the night. Is it fine if you give us a few days to gather the money?” Lilian Yates responded swiftly.

“Sure, we talk with reason in this place...”

Tiger Ray had burst out laughing.

“We’re not scared if you run away either. If you do, we’ll just go to the Zimmers instead!”

“We’ll give the money, but can you not hurt any more people?” Mandy asked.

“But seeing that you’re one of Buckwood’s upstarts or whatever, we’ll show you some respect. You can take him away right now!

“But, we’ll send someone to cut off one of his fingers if you don’t pay me back my money within a day!

“If two days pass, I’ll send someone to cut off another!”

Tiger Ray was laughing wickedly when he finished

Chapter 662

his sentence.

“Fine, we promise you...”

Mandy decided and agreed to his terms on the spot.

If she hadn't, they might not even be allowed to leave.

Telegram @chinesenovels

Chapter 663

Chapter 663

Finally, Harvey York and the others left the scene with Simon Zimmer.

Lilian Yates trembled as they had gotten back to the entrance of the place and reprimanded Simon while on the verge of tears, "I told you to stop gambling, but you never listen to me!"

"Tell us, what are we even going to do now?!"

"Where are we even going to find fourteen million dollars?!"

"Yeah!"

Mandy Zimmer let out a huge sigh.

"We're only delaying them for now, is there anything that we can do other than paying them back?"

Chapter 663

Harvey let out a chuckle without saying anything.

Simon was down at first, but he straightened his body and pointed at Harvey and screamed at him after he saw his expression.

“What are you laughing at?!”

“Hurry up and think! You worthless sack of trash!”

“If I had a good son-in-law, this thing would be solved in minutes!”

“You! You’re just filth! You’re to blame for what happened today!”

Harvey froze over after hearing what he said, he could not fathom how Simon even came close to this conclusion.

He stole the assets himself, how could he still blame someone else for his actions?

Mandy had gotten slightly irate.

“Father, what are you saying? You were the one

Chapter 663

that caused it! What does Harvey even have anything to do with it?!”

“How does he not have anything to do with it?”
Simon said as if he was righteous.

“My daughter is an outstanding woman, obviously she needed to marry an outstanding husband. The ones that could simply take out fourteen million with ease!

“On the other hand, he has been stopping you from divorcing him and even caused me a lot of suffering right now!”

Simon then glared at Harvey furiously.

“Aren't you a capable person? Are you not titled Prince York's agent? Are you not the person that even dared to provoke the Silvas?

“If you have the capabilities, then solve this problem for me!

“I'm telling you, if you don't fix this problem for me, I'll make you divorce Mandy!

Chapter 663

“I always do as promised!”

Simon was terrified at that moment, but he had vented everything onto Harvey when he came back to his senses.

Lilian looked at him and said, “What are you saying? We have to find ways to borrow money now!”

“It’s useless talking about this right now!”

“Let’s go back home first!”

As Harvey and the others had left the scene.

Tiger Ray dialed a number donning a huge grin on his face.

“Lord York, I’ve done everything you asked!”

“The Zimmers are finished!”

“Good, you did well. It’ll be day after a few hours, collect the debt at their doorstep when that happens!”

Wayne York’s voice was heard on the other side of

Chapter 663

the phone.

“Rest assured, Lord York! We’ll handle it efficiently!”

Tiger Ray was still bowing down even if he was on the other side of the phone, because this person was a noble that he would not dare to even cross!

Back at home.

Simon said while being terribly impatient, “Honey, the Zimmers are done for! We don’t even have any money left!

“Our only chance now rests with the Yates family. Didn’t the Old Lady finally recognize us as one of them? We should ask for money from them!

“Look for your sister, she’s terribly spoiled in the family. She must have loads of money!

“It’s the middle of the night, we’ll get the others angry if we go now. We’ll see tomorrow!”

Chapter 663

Lilian glared at Simon with eyes filled with anger.

Mandy also looked extremely gloomy and after letting out a huge sigh she said, “Father, what actually happened to you? It would be easier for us to do things if you could tell us everything!”

Simon quickly jogged his memories and then told them everything in detail.

He was lucky in the beginning, winning a few dozen bets in a row. But he had lost when he wanted to strike the iron while it was hot...

Telegram @ChineseNovels

Chapter 664

Chapter 664

Simon Zimmer had gotten back to his senses while he was in the middle of his explanation and then he loudly exclaimed, "I understand now. I'm being framed and my friends are involved with it!"

Mandy Zimmer and Lilian Yates looked at each other, then nodded in unison.

"This must be it!

"There are only two ways of solving this problem...

"Either we pay the money back!

"Or we find out the person framing you and solve the problem completely!

"But I suggest the latter for now. Let's figure out the situation before we think about paying them back!"

Chapter 664

Harvey York suggested the idea.

Simon then glared at Harvey full of vex in his eyes and then scolded him, “Are you serious? The man said that every day we stall, I’d get one of my fingers cut off!

“Who do you think you are? Sherlock Holmes?!”

“You’re not paying the money, but instead you’re looking for the truth?!”

“By the time you’re done, all of my toes would be gone!”

“Alright—alright—stop fighting. We’ll figure it out first thing in the morning!” Lilian scolded.

“We’ll borrow money from our sister first, then we’ll settle the other problems...”

Harvey and Mandy looked at each other and left after seeing their parents resting.

Mandy thought that something was off and went

Chapter 664

back to the company to think of ideas, Harvey too had left the house quietly.

On the next day.

Everyone was still asleep at the Zimmer Villa.

Out of the blue, the sound of the front door being kicked down echoed throughout the place.

A few dozen fighters rushed inside the villa, every single one of them bearing an imposing manner.

They immediately arrived at the hall of the Zimmer Villa, swiftly shattering a few expensive vases as they please.

Senior Zimmer and the other people of the family hurried over after being startled. They were all shivering in their boots after seeing the fighters in the hall.

Buckwood could not be compared to Niumhi. The gangsters that lived here either had a military

Chapter 664

background or was a government official, they would've been able to survive if it weren't for their statuses.

But even so, Senior Zimmer still barely calmed himself down and took a deep breath.

“What are you here for? Don't mess around! You're trespassing! All this is illegal!” Senior Zimmer scolded them.

Tiger Ray laughed coldly, then threw out a stack of IOUs.

Senior Zimmer and the others walked up and looked at the stack, they were shocked beyond belief.

“What? Simon Zimmer owes you fourteen million dollars? And he took the Zimmers' properties and stock shares among other things as collateral?”

Senior Zimmer looked at the paper written in black and white and almost lost consciousness.

Tiger Ray was smirking proudly.

Chapter 664

“All of your family’s properties are mortgaged to me! Including the villa...”

“Simon Zimmer gave us all of the paperwork..”

“All according to legal procedures...”

Senior Zimmer’s face had made a swift change in his expression during that moment, he quickly looked for the paperwork and stock shares in the house.

Everything was stolen!

“I am thinking that we were robbed last night, who knew that guarding a thousand thieves would be easier than to guard just one at home...” Sean Zimmer exclaimed furiously.

“Now, the deeds of your estates and your various properties are all with us...”

“So hurry up and pay us what you owe!”

“If not, we’ll confiscate everything here!”

Chapter 664

“At that point, don’t blame me for what happens next...” Tiger Ray said with a huge grin on his face, but the smile on his face looked like the Devil himself to the Zimmers.

Senior Zimmer went dead silent.

Because various paperworks, proof of property, stock share notes were all in their hands..

“Simon Zimmer, you bastard...”

Senior Zimmer was boiling with anger to the point where he puked blood and was about to pass out falling right onto the ground.

Chapter 665

Chapter 665

“I’ll give you one day to get the money, you know the consequences if you don’t already!

“When that happens, I’ll have to invite the Zimmers to beg for food on the streets!

“Hahaha...”

Tiger Ray turned around and left with a smug expression, extremely full of himself.

When the Zimmers all calmed themselves down, they were all almost driven mad.

“Go... Find Simon Zimmer!”

“Right, someone needs to take responsibility!”

“Senior, beat this bastard to a pulp...”

Chapter 665

On first light, Simon and Lilian Yates were just heading out the door while carrying dark circles around their eyes.

Knock knock knock!

At this moment, there were loud knocks on the door echoing inside.

As soon as Simon opened the door, a throng of people immediately rushed in and filled the room.

Senior Zimmer leading the crowd gave Simon a furious slap across his face.

“You wastrel! What did you do this time?! Tell us!

“I worked hard my entire life and finally got us into Buckwood!

“After so many setbacks, so many hardships, the Zimmers were finally about to make it big in Buckwood...

“How dare you come and bite me in the back?! You

Chapter 665

bastard!”

In the middle of his speech, he landed a few more slaps across Simon’s face.

“Dad... Y-y-you... You knew?!” Simon said while holding his stinging face.

“People almost tore the villa down early in the morning. How would we not know of it?!” Senior Zimmer said while still catching his breath.

Sean Zimmer said with a sullen face, “Simon, nobody’s stopping you if you’re looking for your own death...

“Then, why are you dragging the whole family in the water with you?!”

“Tell us! What are you even doing?!”

“Your son-in-law is filth, don’t tell me you’re turning into one as well!”

Senior Zimmer gave Simon a cold deathly stare and scolded him, “If you don’t come clean and tell us

Chapter 665

what's actually happening, I'll cut off your fingers myself!"

Simon's body was trembling while he gave a look at Lilian and said, "It's all Harvey's fault! ❶

"What? What does this have to do with him?"

Senior Zimmer was perplexed.

'What's going on here?'

Simon Zimmer replied like it was obvious, "Does it not? He was the one that lost his gambles!"

"They wanted to cut him down, that's why I went to steal the things."

All the Zimmers had murderous auras surrounding them instantaneously. He knew that if he told the truth, he would truly be beaten to death by them!

That was why he shifted the blame to Harvey York as the culprit instead.

But the Zimmers did not believe him one bit,

Chapter 665

instead they all looked at Lilian.

She also figured that they would be dead in a ditch if she told the whole truth.

She grinded her teeth and said, "That's right! It's all Harvey's fault!"

"The bastard kept gambling because he wanted to run away from the title of being a worthless sack of trash and did it to impress the Zimmers!"

"Father, do you remember that Mandy suddenly had seventy-five thousand dollars to solve the company problem back in Niumhi?" ①

Senior Zimmer gave it a thought and said, "Of course I remember, are you saying that he won the money?"

"Right. Even though he said that it was borrowed, I know that he gambled his way out..."

Lilian did everything in her power to make Harvey the scapegoat at that moment.

"I did not think that he would lose this much

Chapter 665

money this time!

“And worse still, he got caught cheating on someone else’s turf...”

The Zimmers all looked at each other, seemingly bought into Lilian’s words.

Simon let out an exhale in secret. Thank goodness that his wife was quick-witted, he would’ve been dead there if it weren’t for her.

Harvey would be made into a scapegoat no matter what!

‘He’s my son-in-law! He has to acknowledge the blame!’

Chapter 666

Chapter 666

“Where’s Harvey?” Zack Zimmer immediately jumped up and said furiously.

Simon Zimmer took this opportunity.

“Can’t you see that he’s absent? He already ran away!”

Senior Zimmer was trembling in anger.

“Harvey York, you bastard. I’ll kill him!

“Go! Find that bastard now!”

A crowd of people furiously marched out of the hall.

When the Zimmers had finally left, Simon Zimmer let out an exhale of relief.

‘Thank goodness that I was smart. I would’ve been beaten to a pulp if I wasn’t.’

Chapter 666

“Thank goodness you’re also here, honey. They wouldn’t believe me if you weren’t,” Simon said nervously.

“Why would I even say things like this if it weren’t for saving your sorry soul?”

“But the filth, Harvey isn’t all that useful anyway. He’ll be better off being a scapegoat!”

“Come on, let’s go find my sister and my brother-in-law and ask them for money...”

“The people will cut off your finger if we don’t give them the money soon!”

Lilian Yates let out a sigh.

Simon did not waste more time to speak after hearing this, he immediately looked for precious and expensive gifts around the house.

The couple went to the hotel that Tanya Yates was in with the blink of an eye and checked in.

“Big Sister, Brother-In-Law. What sort of business

Chapter 666

do you have looking for me this early in the morning?” Tanya asked while still feeling groggy.

“Little Sister, Brother-In-Law. I’ll come straight to the point! I need to borrow fourteen million dollars from you! I need it for a business deal!”

“Don’t worry if you think that we can’t reimburse your money. You know about the Silver Nimbus Mountain Resort project, it’s worth millions. It will not be a problem to get millions if the project is a success!” Simon and Lilian were being direct, they were not holding anything back.

Tanya and Leyton Luv were shocked by the amount that they asked for, but still gave a thought about it and said, “Give us some time to talk about this...”

After making some calls for half an hour, they had agreed to lend the money in exchange for the stock shares from the Silver Nimbus Enterprise as collateral.

“Not a problem! We’ll bring you what you want later!”

Chapter 666

Simon was jumping with excitement.

‘As long as the money is at hand, I’ll be safe!’

But at that moment, Tanya’s phone had rung.

Her expression changed in the blink of an eye, she was still being extremely polite even though she was talking to the person on the other side of the phone.

“Please give us your instructions...”

“It’s nothing much. I’m just telling something trivial, in case you get fooled by some people...”

Tanya’s expression was still normal after the person on the phone said something, but her face had changed drastically the longer she listened in. She eventually glared at Lilian and Simon full of disdain.

“Yes yes yes yes! Thank you for telling me!”

Tanya was boiling with anger after ending the call,

Chapter 666

she then exclaimed furiously, “How dare you lie to me?”

“And you said that you needed money for business!”

“It was obviously because Simon lost fourteen million dollars in gambling!”

Leyton was also stunned, he could not hold in his anger after realizing that Simon was deluding him.

“Scram! Come back to see me when you pay your debt!”

“Filth! You don’t learn anything worthwhile but instead you learn to gamble?!”

Simon and Lilian were kicked out of the room just like that and they both were perplexed as they walked out to the hall.

They had already agreed to lend the money, then a phone call was enough for them to retract the agreement.

“What are we supposed to do now?”

Chapter 666

Simon was anxious to the point where he was on the verge of tears. He would be in big trouble if he did not pay the debt.

On the other hand, Mandy Zimmer was also looking for ways to find money. But even if they were to embezzle public funds of Silver Nimbus Enterprise, they could only get at most four million dollars. They could not get any more than that.

But once they take the money, Silver Nimbus Enterprise would have to shut down and the Silver Nimbus Mountain Resort project might even be abandoned because of that.

Ergo, Mandy would be the culprit of the Zimmers' fall! ③

Chapter 667

Chapter 667

At the same time, Harvey York had already started his investigation.

He inquired information from the connections he had with some gangsters and was basically sure that Simon Zimmer was not cheating from the beginning, him winning a lot at the start was purely luck and it was not even intentional.

He had only lost money later only because he met a skilled player in the said game.

It was safe to assume that the incident had been plotted by an outsider, but everything was flawless, he could not find anything off about the situation.

Of course, it would be much easier for the police to find out what actually took place if they were called.

But if that were to happen, then Simon Zimmer

Chapter 667

would have to live behind bars for quite a while.

If that were the case, Mandy Zimmer would be heartbroken.

And Harvey definitely did not want to see her that way. ①

In all honesty, it was only fourteen million dollars. With his worth, it would be a matter of minutes before the money could be paid back.

But he still wanted to know the person that had orchestrated all of this.

At the Zimmers' house.

Simon and his wife were already thinking of ideas for the whole day, there was no way to get this much money so quickly.

Many people immediately hung up their calls after hearing that they wanted to borrow millions of dollars.

Chapter 667

At that moment, just the thought of Simon's finger getting cut off soon and him being exposed about the situation that was actually caused by him, he was trembling in his boots.

"Honey, what do we do? Can you think of other alternatives? I don't want my finger getting cut off!" Simon said with a frown.

Lilian Yates gave a huge sigh and said, "I just called Mandy, she said she could only get us four million. She could possibly go to jail for embezzling public funds..."

"But she had already started to look around for more money, we might need a few days before we can even get to fourteen million..."

"We can't wait that long! All of my fingers would be cut off if we do!"

Simon's cold sweats were dripping down his whole body.

"That's why someone else should go instead of

Chapter 667

you!” Lilian simply said.

Simon’s eyes lit up as soon as he heard that statement.

“You’re saying that we should push that filth, Harvey out to have his fingers cut off in my place?”

“Do you have anyone else to spare? That filth is useless anyway. Now’s a good time to recycle!

“You already made him your scapegoat anyway...”

Lilian hummed.

Simon nodded with approval.

“That’s right, he is filth! Utterly useless!

“Since a man like this has become our son-in-law, he has to give something back to the family!

“He had already relied on us to keep him alive anyway. It wouldn’t hurt that much to have his fingers cut off...

“He had it coming for him!”

Chapter 667

Lilian Yates sighed and replied, "The only problem now is Mandy..."

"Mandy's really softhearted. She would never let Harvey take your place if she knew..."

"Then we keep her in the dark!"

"And then we trick Harvey into going in my stead!" Simon said while gritting his teeth.

"Then we should get Senior Zimmer and the others here as well to put more pressure on the filth, Harvey. If not, this filth might not submit to this plan that easily!"

"Good point. They probably couldn't find this filth even after a whole day, right? And most probably they're boiling with anger right now!"

Simon Zimmer nodded and immediately started to arrange things.

Soon, he gave a call to Mandy and told her that Tiger Ray had agreed on delaying the deadline for a

Chapter 667

few days so that she could think of other ideas of procuring the funds.

After that, they called Senior Zimmer and the others.

They swiftly came over after hearing that Harvey was found.

He then finally called Tiger Ray and asked if he could let Harvey be the one punished in his stead.

Tiger Ray happily agreed.

Telegram @chineseNovels

Chapter 668

Chapter 668

On the other side, Tiger Ray enigmatically hung up on the phone, then stood up and respectfully dialed a phone number that had a nice ring on the tail numbers.

“Lord York, everything is proceeding just as you planned. The Zimmers are going to use Harvey York to take responsibility!”

“Good, then continue as planned. Remember, Harvey is a handful to deal with. Please exercise caution!”

“Of course!”

Tiger Ray hung up the phone and started to rub his palms together in anticipation.

At the Silver Nimbus Courtyard.

Chapter 668

Wayne York hung up the phone and his cold expression showed on his face.

Stephen York was sitting in front of him, laughed and asked, "This is such a simple trick, it's extremely flawed. Do you think that Big Brother will actually fall for it?"

"And don't you realize the person that he is? How could it be that he'd let someone cut off his finger obediently?"

Wayne calmly replied, "I do know that it's impossible in normal circumstances."

"What kind of man is Tiger Ray anyway? He doesn't even have the right to lick his own boots..."

"But do you know that 'Hares may pull dead lions by the beard'?"

"If we plot against him while he least expects it, maybe he would meet with an unexpected failure?"

Stephen picked up the tea cup in front of him and

Chapter 668

said calmly, "His Sky Corporation would be considered a powerful force recently, acquiring quite a few big projects in Buckwood..."

"Under these circumstances, even if you're not able to cut his hand off, it would be a good thing for the Yorks if you can even lock him in captivity for a few days..."

Wayne coldly laughed as he shifted his gaze toward the side of the hall.

He did not know what Quinton York was thinking.

But he knew that he could not stand against Harvey's vanguards and cannon fodder.

"Prince York, the legendary Prince York..."

Even the man in charge of the Yorks' power on the streets, Wayne did not have the confidence to take down Harvey at that moment.

On the other side, Harvey continued his

Chapter 668

investigation and right when the truth was almost in sight, Simon Zimmer called his phone.

“Harvey, come quick! There’s been a turnaround, come to the casino immediately!”

After hanging up the phone, Harvey had arrived at the place at a moment’s notice.

When he was there, he saw Senior Zimmer and the others waiting for him.

Senior Zimmer was the first one to walk toward him and slap him across his face the moment he walked in.

“What is wrong with you?! You little bastard!

“You lost fourteen million dollars in bets?! Are you trying to kill the Zimmers?!”

“The family is about to be ruined by you single-handedly!

“I really want to kill you right now!”

“...”

Chapter 668

Harvey froze over.

‘When did I ever gamble?’

‘How did this turn into my fault?’

But as soon as he saw Simon and Lilian Yates faces not too far away, he understood immediately.

Simply put, they shifted all the blame onto himself.

Senior Zimmer would clearly vent at him since he did not know the whole story.

Before Harvey could even open his mouth, the one responsible had immediately walked up and started to scold him, “Harvey, you have to take responsibility for what you did!”

“That’s right! You have to take responsibility!”

Senior Zimmer and the others were practically roaring at him.

Simon then dragged him to the side and whispered at him, “You’re going to meet Tiger Ray in my place

Chapter 668

later!

“If you don’t, I’ll make you divorce Mandy!

“I’ll do as I promised!”

Lilian also walked over and exhorted him, “If you go in your father-in-law’s stead, you’ll be our good son-in-law in the future!

“We won’t give you the cold shoulder even if you lose a finger anyway, Mandy and I will take care of you forever!

“Right, you’re filth anyway. You’ll be fine if you lose a finger!”

Chapter 669

Chapter 669

Harvey York froze.

He was shocked beyond belief.

He was still figuring out a way to solve the problem and to find out who was the culprit.

But he did not think that Simon Zimmer and Lilian Yates were this heartless to make him into the scapegoat this quickly!

If it weren't for Mandy Zimmer, he would not be the least bit interested in this matter.

If it weren't for her, he would have already snapped.

But for Simon and Lilian, this was a desperate measure for desperate times.

If they didn't shift the blame to Harvey, they would have been finished!

Chapter 669

Even so, they did not think about what to do just yet.

“What are you people still waiting for?! Admit to your mistakes! Then take responsibility for all of them!” Senior Zimmer said coldly.

At this moment, Tiger Ray had just walked in with his men into the casino, surrounding the Zimmers in no time.

“He’s here. Please do what you must with him!”

Before Harvey could even react, Simon and Lilian had already pushed him out.

“You’re Harvey York? Take him away!”

Tiger Ray’s eyes lit up and immediately had his men lock Harvey’s arms and then dragged him away.

Simon and Lilian sighed in relief after seeing that scene unfold before them.

As long as Tiger Ray agreed, they did not care

Chapter 669

whether Harvey would survive or not.

They were respited the moment Harvey was taken away.

“Let’s get out of here! Don’t get dragged into his problems!”

Simon and his wife had left swiftly.

The Zimmers had also left, they did not want to cause anymore unwanted trouble.

Back home, Simon frowned and said, “Today was quite successful, it might be the best to do it this way...”

“I’m thinking if I could blame that filth for everything...”

Lilian’s expression changed and then she replied, “So you’re saying that you’re going to make Harvey pay for the fourteen million dollars on his own, then make him divorce Mandy and disassociate ourselves with him?”

“Right!” Simon acknowledged her response

Chapter 669

naturally.

“If we can pull this off, not only could we solve the problem with the debt...

“The most important thing is to kick this annoying filth out of the house!

“Two birds, one stone!”

Simon was feeling proud, he was being joyful about the master plan he had just concocted on the spot.

Lilian gave it a thought and coldly chuckled.

“You wish!

“Don't forget. You were the one that lost the money and the one that signed the contract in the first place! How could you even possibly shift it all to him?!

“Besides that, maybe you could sell off his stupid watch and Mandy's jewelries. I heard that they're worth a fortune...”

Simon let out a long sigh.

Chapter 669

“I know that, but you forgot about the black and white written on the legal paper. Those things are already mortgaged...”

Lilian froze for a second, then was trembling in fury.

But there was no other choice, they had to think of a better solution or they might helplessly stare as Simon sends himself to his own death.

Without a second thought, the husband and wife both looked at each other.

“We need a plan to shift the debt to that filth at once!

“Filth and debt are really a match made in heaven!”

At the same time, in the casino.

Harvey was taken into a small dark room.

Tiger Ray was sitting in front of him, surrounded by buffed men.

Chapter 669

He sized up Harvey, then lightly chuckled after a moment.

“Indeed you’re a live-in son-in-law, you must be trembling in your boots right now. Someone actually asked me to be wary of you but you don’t look all that special now that I’m looking at you...”

Harvey glared back at Tiger Ray and asked, “Who do you work for? Chopper Lyon wouldn’t even dare to touch me. The person that you’re working for must have some guts.”

Telegram @chinese-novels

Chapter 670

Chapter 670

“Pfft... Hahaha!

“Chopper Lyon, the Dragon Head Lyon would not dare to touch you?”

Tiger Ray froze for a brief moment, then bursted out laughing.

“You’re not just using the gang boss, Dragon Head Lyon’s name to scare me just because you know it, right?”

“Let me enlighten you, I graduated from the University of Country H! Don’t even try to use Dragon Head Lyon’s name to scare me!

“Even if you know Master Caesar and Sean Bill’s names, it means nothing to me! The status of the person that’s backing me up is...”

Tiger Ray felt like something was off when he was

Chapter 670

in the middle of his remark, he then abruptly stopped.

He gave a stern look at Harvey York and then said, “No wonder someone asked me to be careful of you. I almost got tricked by your smarts!

“Alright, enough nonsense with you little prick. Since your father-in-law brought you here to repay his debt, according to the rules, I’ll be chopping off one of your fingers today!

“Are you ready?”

Tiger Ray then pulled out a knife and stuck it onto the table after he was done talking.

“Do you want to do it yourself? Or you’d rather have the boys to help you out?”

Harvey reached out his hand to grab the knife and examined it.

“A military-use knife from South America, not too shabby...”

Tiger Ray coldly chuckled.

Chapter 670

“Good eye, but what good does that have to do with you anyway?”

Harvey did not say another word, he pinched the blade of the knife with his middle and index finger and flicked it slightly.

The military-use knife was then spinning between his fingers like a spinning top.

“This...”

In the blink of an eye, everyone present was slightly shocked.

Harvey's trick was not that one could do if they did not play with knives for a long while.

This was not just some toy knife to do tricks with but an actual sharp knife.

But Harvey was playing around with it like it was just a toy.

Tiger Ray automatically asked right after he froze, “

Chapter 670

You bastard, where did you learn this?! Who do you think you're trying to scare?!"

One of the fighters said with uncertainty, "Boss, I remember only soldiers that had fought on the battlefield would play with a knife like this.

"People that never saw bloodshed wouldn't have the courage to play with one!"

Everyone's expressions changed immediately after they heard what the fighter said.

Tiger Ray frowned at first, then coldly laughed, "Oh, just stop that thought. Do you think a guy like him belongs in the military? He doesn't even look the part!

"He probably learned it from the internet somewhere!

"Who does he think he's trying to scare?"

Harvey stopped his hand's movements and pinched the blade of the knife, then calmly said, "Before I'm done playing around, you're going to tell me who

Chapter 670

you're working for. I won't make you take responsibility if you do...

"If not, you'll be bearing dire consequences. A fate much worse than death!

"I'm not really a patient man, so hurry up and make your choice!" Harvey said casually.

But after hearing what he said, Tiger Ray and his few dozen fighters were laughing their heads off.

'The live-in son-in-law is about to have his finger cut off, how can he still threaten people here right now?

'Is he still half asleep?'

Everyone was looking at Harvey like he was an idiot.

'This man really does not have any idea that he's playing with death.'

'A fate worse than death?'

Tiger Ray burst out laughing.

Chapter 670

“This kid, he thinks that he can scare people just by learning some knife spinning tricks?”

“But that’s fine, if he doesn’t dare to do it himself, we’ll certainly help him out!”

“It’s not our first rodeo anyway...”

After hearing Tiger Ray and the others’ nonsense, Harvey kept his eyes closed and said calmly, “I’m quite impatient, there’s not much time that I gave you left. If you still won’t tell me what I want to know, I can promise that all of you shall have a fate worse than death...”

Chapter 671

Chapter 671

Tiger Ray and his men did not believe a word he just said, they all coldly laughed at him.

“Alright then! I’m interested to see what a live-in son-in-law is capable of doing!”

Doo—

Harvey York’s motion of his hand stopped under the gaze of a few dozen men, then the sound of him sticking the knife into the table furiously echoed throughout the room.

He raised his head to glare at Tiger Ray and coldly said, “You’ll regret it soon enough!”

“I’ll regret nothing!

“I’ll cut off your hand first!”

Tiger Ray was boiling with anger at that moment,

Chapter 671

he took the knife in his hand and furiously swung toward the direction of Harvey York.

Bang!

The door of the small dark room was busted open at that moment making a deafening sound.

In a split second, muscular men in black suits rushed into the small room.

Those men were all around six feet tall, all standing tall in high spirits.

They were the men assigned as Harvey's personal bodyguards by Tyson Woods.

They had been hiding in the darkness, then naturally made a move with Harvey's signal.

“You dare to detain the boss?! Beat them all up!”

The bodyguard leading the charge gave a loud battle cry and made the first move.

Bang bang bang!

Chapter 671

“Ugh—”

Even if the men from the casino were good fighters, those trained fighters were in a league of their own.

In under a minute, the fighters were all lying motionless on the ground.

This is because Tyson had ordered the bodyguards to strike lethal blows.

The gangsters were all beaten up to the point where they were disfigured at that moment.

In the end, there was only Tiger Ray that was left standing.

Harvey said casually while making an indifferent expression, “You can do whatever you want with him as long as he doesn’t die.”

Bang bang bang!

A few bodyguards walked up toward Tiger Ray and gripped his neck and then landed multiple blows on

Chapter 671

his face.

Wails that resemble squeals of a pig echoed throughout the room.

They would have never guessed that Harvey would have this many bodyguards following him.

And they were extremely strong as well, their combat prowess was terrifying.

When everything was over, Harvey looked at the fighter that was on the ground and said calmly, “Didn’t I just told you that you’d regret it.”

“Are you going to tell me now or what?”

Harvey was giving an expression as cold as ice, he would rather have them talk than to investigate himself.

Tiger Ray covered his face and replied while trembling in his boots, “I can’t say! I’ll be dead if I do!”

“Keep beating him up! Do it until he talks!” Harvey

Chapter 671

said coldly.

Those bodyguards finally had the chance to show themselves off. They went all out on a frenzy to beat everyone to a pulp.

After spitting out a few mouthfuls of blood, Tiger Ray then lifted his hands up and said, "I'll talk! I'll tell you everything you want to know!"

The bodyguards dragged him in front of Harvey, he trembled after locking eyes with him and said, "It's ... It's the Silva Corporation... The new CEO, Joel Flynn asked us to do this! We got coerced into doing this..."

Tiger Ray was trembling in his boots, he really would not dare to say Wayne York's name, he could only utter the name of Joel.

But after hearing the name, Harvey immediately realized that the Yorks were the ones behind this.

Harvey chuckled.

"So he was the one that wanted to cut my fingers

Chapter 671

off?”

“Yeah!”

Tiger Ray nodded immediately.

Harvey casually gave a look at the bodyguards standing beside him.

The bodyguards immediately understood, then they pressed Tiger Ray against the table swiftly and held up a sharp knife.

“Record this with the phone, then send it to Joel Flynn...” Harvey said calmly.

“No! Don’t!”

Tiger Ray realized what would happen next and was screaming his heart out in fear.

Chapter 672

Chapter 672

Soon, Harvey York sent the video footage to Joel Flynn via Tiger Ray's phone.

The moment Joel Flynn got the video footage, he immediately forwarded it to Wayne York.

“So you do scream with fear. I had always thought that if you were a god, you would never have emotions like this...”

Wayne had a strange look on his face. In his eyes, Harvey was like a god to him.

But at that moment, he felt like his god had fallen from his throne collapsed along with the image of his idol.

“Joel, send the footage to everyone in the Zimmers, including Mandy Zimmer. I want to know what kind of reaction they'll make...”

Chapter 672

Wayne laughed loudly, this was a test.

Soon, all the Zimmers had received the footage.

Seeing that the person in the footage had his finger cut off, Simon Zimmer was trembling in his boots and his face immediately turned pale.

“Dear God! This is too much! Thank goodness that the filth went in my place. I would’ve been finished if it were me...”

“Looks like these people were not messing around!”

Lilian Yates was also terrified of what she saw, a woman that had been fed with a silver spoon had never seen a sight as such.

“These... These people are ruthless!”

Senior Zimmer and the others were also shocked beyond belief. They thought that Tiger Ray was only bluffing, they did not think that it would really end up like this.

Mandy that was still thinking of ideas to save her

Chapter 672

father also received the footage.

She almost burst out in tears after playing it.

She calmed herself down after a while, and swiftly gave a phone call to Simon.

“Father, how are you? Are you okay?”

“I’m fine!” Simon replied.

“Isn’t your finger cut off?” Mandy asked in confusion.

“It’s... It’s Harvey’s...” Simon hesitated for a bit, then said with a slight fear in his tone.

“What? Harvey’s? How could it be his?”

Mandy broke down into tears when Simon finally told him the truth.

“Father, Mother. How could you do such a thing?”

“You ruined his life!”

Lilian grabbed her phone and said, “Mandy, your

Chapter 672

dad was also forced into this problem!

“And besides, Harvey was the one that was willing to replace your father!

“Nobody forced him!

“He’s our son-in-law after all. Isn’t it normal to sacrifice for the family?”

“How could you do this? You didn’t even tell me. Just you wait. I’ll be right back!”

Mandy was anxiously crying.

Soon, she returned back to Simon’s house.

“My dearest daughter, it really was Harvey’s idea,” Simon exclaimed.

“It’s fine even if he loses another finger anyway!

“He’s just filth!

“But not me, I still need to make money with these two hands!”

Mandy did not know how to react after hearing

Chapter 672

what her own father just said.

“Mandy, we don’t need to worry about the money for now. Harvey still has nine fingers, he should be able to hold on for a couple more days!” Lilian said reassuringly.

Mandy immediately broke down.

“His fingers will get cut off if you stall each day! Are you that heartless?!”

“How could you say something like this?!”

“Oh Mandy, it can’t be helped!” Lilian tried to convince her.

“Do you want to helplessly watch as your father goes and takes the blame instead? Harvey is our son-in-law, and he’s also a young man. He can take it!”

Mandy was quivering for a while, she then raised her head and glared at her parents.

“Tell me the truth, are the two of you the ones forcing him to go?!”

Chapter 672

“He did it willingly, how could we possibly have urged him to go? How do we even force him?”

Simon immediately denied the claims without hesitation.

Lilian gave a thought then said, “Mandy, you should divorce Harvey once we repaid the debt...”

Telegram @chinesenovels

Chapter 673

Chapter 673

Mandy Zimmer had broken down into tears before, she could not believe what she heard then.

“What? Divorce?”

“Father, Mother! Don't you realize that Harvey took responsibility for the both of you?! It's wrong just to kick the man aside after using him!”

“Oh, Mandy. We're not that kind of people!” Simon Zimmer swiftly replied.

“We all remembered everything that Harvey had done for the family.

“The Zimmers aren't a bunch of ungrateful people. How could we possibly do such a thing?”

“He wasn't fit for you since the beginning anyway...”

“We'll repay him money once everything's over,

Chapter 673

but you have to leave him!” Simon and Lilian Yates tried to convince her for the divorce for the umpteenth time.

“You two...”

Mandy’s heart had skipped a beat after hearing what her parents said, this was just too disappointing for her to bear.

“You have to divorce him! He already wasn’t fit for you in the beginning, he’s even more unfit now that he lost his finger!

“I will not accept the fact that my son-in-law is a crippled person!”

Simon was determined.

It was because of him that Harvey was crippled, but he did not feel an ounce of guilt after saying such things.

Mandy froze.

How could her own parents do such a heartless

Chapter 673

thing?

“Mandy, things have already progressed up to this point. If you want Harvey to bear less pain, then hurry up and pay back the debt,” Lilian added.

At this moment, Senior Zimmer had come into the house joyously after boiling with anger.

“God bless the family! A turning point!” Senior Zimmer was showing a face full of joy.

“Father, what do you mean?”

Simon and Lilian were confused with the situation.

“Someone contacted and informed us that he would be willing to solve this problem for us, but he has a condition...”

Senior Zimmer made a mysterious expression.

“What condition?” Simon and his wife asked in unison.

“It’s really simple, he wants Mandy to accompany

Chapter 673

her once. He'll hand us fourteen million for just one time..." Senior Zimmer said while making a huge grin, he did not think that the request was overstepping at all.

"What? Are there really good things such as this?" Simon instinctively questioned.

Lilian angrily glared at him and then asked, "Senior, are you for real? Nobody's trying to trick us, are they?"

Senior Zimmer raised the cheque in his hand, then said, "The man had already sent the money. We just need to ask for Mandy's consent about this. Will she be willing to sacrifice for her family?"

Mandy's head went blank for a moment, she did not know what to do.

She could not acquire fourteen million at that moment, the amount was too big.

And yet someone was willing to help, but the condition...

Chapter 673

Harvey and she were married for three whole years but he did not as much as touch her, not even once.

She could not bear with herself if she were to sell herself out for money.

“Oh, Mandy! There’s no need to hesitate! Just lay down and close your eyes, it’ll be over in a minute. It’s just like being injected with a needle!”

Lilian understood what she was going through her head and she was trying to comfort her with her own experience.

Simon’s face had turned as dark as night, he then swiftly said, “Right, it’ll be quick! It’ll be just a minute, I’m experienced with it. I’ll never lie to you!”

Lilian continued.

“Just bear with it. Think about it this way, a minute of your time will save Harvey from his pain of losing another finger. How is this not worth it?”

The scene of Harvey’s finger being cut off had

Chapter 673

appeared inside Mandy's mind suddenly.

For Harvey, she would do it...

“Fine, I'll accept the offer!” Mandy said while her tears were unconsciously dripping down her face.

Senior Zimmer, Simon and Lilian, all let out a sigh of relief.

If it was possible to pay the debt, it would have meant nothing for Mandy to be taken advantage of.

Senior Zimmer presented a room card to Mandy.

“Since you agreed, you should make your way to W Hotel!

“The man is already waiting for you...”

Chapter 674

Chapter 674

Mandy Zimmer forced herself to calm down and said, "Grandfather, since I already agreed, can you at least tell me who this person is?"

"We don't know either, but he let me tell you that if you would accompany him and be his woman in secret, he'll repay the debt for us and he'll even let the Zimmers be a true first-class family in all of Buckwood!" Senior Zimmer said excitedly.

Simon Zimmer and Lilian Yates locked their eyes and both saw the surprise which was evident in their eyes.

'Is this an actual blessing in disguise?'

'Is another rich and wealthy man looking up to Mandy again?'

'Who is that man?'

Chapter 674

‘Maybe it’s the legendary Prince York?’

‘All the people said that Mandy Zimmer is actually Prince York’s woman in secret, but there was no evidence to prove it.’

‘Maybe everything is finally turning to a reality?’

‘Perhaps Prince York had forced her before, but she was unwilling to submit.’

‘Maybe now Prince York finally found a chance?’

Simon and Lilian looked at each other and saw the bliss in each others’ eyes.

‘Yes!’

If their own daughter really became Prince York’s woman in secret, then they would be swimming in wealth and glory for the rest of their lives. They could even do whatever they please in all of South Light!

Mandy was still hesitating.

Chapter 674

Senior Zimmer had already urged her, “Mandy, make your choice!

“Tiger Ray changed the rules over at the casino. He said that he’ll give us another day. If we’re late, Harvey’s fingers are all going to be cut off!”

Mandy that was hesitating immediately went over to the hotel with the room card.

Everything was obviously Wayne York’s plan. He had “faithfully” carried out Quinton York’s orders, so everything would be arranged accordingly.

But a man like that would never be in the frontlines.

Even if the image of his idol, Harvey, was shattered, he was still careful about the situation.

Carrying an uneasy feeling, Mandy had finally arrived at the presidential suite of W Hotel.

She knew what this had meant.

But her main objective was to repay the debt and to

Chapter 674

let Harvey bear less pain.

Mandy took a deep breath at the front entrance and she only slowly pushed the door open after forcing herself to calm down.

A man had stood up while crossing his arms in the big living room.

Mandy slightly froze over after seeing the silhouette, but everything felt familiar to her.

She was shocked beyond belief when the silhouette turned around.

The man looked quite like Harvey, but he bore with him an unspeakable evil aura.

The aura did not clash with him, but enhanced his presence as an upperclassman.

“You must be Mrs. Mandy Zimmer,” the man smiled and greeted respectfully.

“Let me introduce myself...

“I’m a York, Wayne York...”

Chapter 674

“From... the York family?!” Mandy unconsciously asked in surprise.

Wayne chuckled.

“You’re smart... I’m the third in the family, one of the four masters of the Yorks...

“And your father was the one that lost fourteen million, but I can guarantee you that there was no cheating involved and no shady tricks either. He only has himself to blame for his losses...”

“Why?!”

Mandy glared at Wayne.

“The Zimmers have no quarrel with you, why are you doing this to us?!”

“We don’t even know each other!”

“Do we not?”

Wayne was assessing Mandy, he was examining her thoroughly.

Chapter 674

“Can you not guess why we did this to your family?”

“Is it because of that man?!” Mandy hesitantly said.

Telegram @chinesenovels

Chapter 675

Chapter 675

“That’s right, it’s because of that man!”

Wayne York smiled.

Mandy Zimmer did not know how to explain.

“But the Zimmers don’t even know that man!”

“Everyone was saying that I was actually that man’s woman in secret, but I’ve never seen his face. I don’t even know what he looks like!

“How can you just force your hand onto the Zimmers because of some false claim?!”

“How could you?!”

“You... Have never even seen his face?”

Wayne was perplexed at first and then he burst out laughing.

Chapter 675

“Interesting, interesting!”

“No wonder Quinton said that he would be the hardest to deal with. Previously, I couldn’t believe it but now I do!”

“Ahahahahaha...”

“Maybe I did meet Prince York?”

A plethora of faces had flashed inside Mandy’s mind, but she had denied every single one of them being Prince York, Harvey York included.

Because she knew that if Harvey was actually Prince York, how could he let his fingers be cut off by other people?

“Alright, since the person doesn’t want to say it himself. I wouldn’t want to expose him either. The game wouldn’t be fun if I did anyway!”

Wayne York was making a ruthless grin the whole time.

“Mandy Zimmer, I’ll give you two choices!”

Chapter 675

“Number one: take the initiative and strip bear for me, and serve me like a dog!

“Or number two: you leave, but your cheap husband is screwed; his fingers and toes will be cut off and maybe he’ll even be thrown into Pearl River as fodder for the fishes!”

Wayne was showing an evil smirk on his face.

His objective was almost complete.

He was not ready to confront Harvey just yet, but was prepared to let him go.

In his eyes, if he could make the woman in front of him listen to himself, his brother would likely be enraged.

Harvey would do anything for the woman he loved after all.

When the time would come where Harvey and Quinton York would fight, who would be the final victor?

Chapter 675

But whomever it may be, Wayne would be the one reaping all the benefits.

That was why he was ecstatic at that moment, he would even wait until he eventually would finish Mandy off until everything was over.

If so, only then he could successfully make Quinton take the blame.

“Make your choice, I’m quite impatient...”

Wayne grinned maliciously, this was an interesting game of cat and mouse.

He did not mind playing the long game, because it was just interesting.

Mandy’s face was as pale as a ghost. She almost bit her own lip to the point where it would bleed, she was holding onto both of her arms crossing her body. Unable to decide even after a while, her whole body even started to tremble wildly... 2

“Looks like I have to give you a little bit of

Chapter 675

motivation...”

Wayne licked his dry and chapped lips, then walked up toward her...

Senior Zimmer had already received news from the bank that the cheque could be used the moment Mandy had arrived at the hotel.

At the same time, he and Simon Zimmer had arrived at the gambling den.

But they froze as soon as they went into the room.

That was because Harvey came out of the basement while carrying a stack of paperwork along with deeds and whatnot.

The most important thing was that he was totally unharmed, not a single drop of blood on him.

Both of their sights had shifted toward Harvey's hands.

Not a finger missing.

Chapter 675

But there was definitely a finger being cut off from someone's hand in the footage!

While the two were still rooted, Harvey walked up and looked at the cheque and then frowned.

“A cheque of fourteen million dollars? Where did you get this?”

Harvey realized that he might have gotten something totally wrong.

“You... How are you still fine? Weren't your fingers cut off?” Simon said while shaking in his boots.

Chapter 676

Chapter 676

Ignoring their question, Harvey York furrowed his eyebrows and raised his voice. “Spit it out! What’s with this cheque?”

“It’s...”

Simon Zimmer hesitated.

“Tell me!!!”

Harvey roared suddenly.

At this very moment, Harvey gave off a vibe so violent and tyrannical that it was hard to describe through words alone. He was so fierce that Simon Zimmer and Senior Zimmer almost stopped breathing.

The two felt as though a large, invisible was choking their necks.

Chapter 676

Nothing was scarier than Harvey's glaring eyes.

Simon was so taken aback, so astounded, that he ended up confessing everything.

"Buckwood's Grand Hotel W!"

"How long had she left?" Harvey growled.

"Nearly half an hour," Simon uttered. "But it's probably too late now..."

Senior Zimmer nodded in agreement. "Yes. Even if you drive there with a sports car, you won't be able to stop them."

Harvey tossed all the documents on the floor and sprinted out as fast as he could while calling Ethan Hunt.

"Ethan, I need a helicopter! I'm now at..."

Harvey's tone was terrifyingly icy. Initially, he had no intention of wielding his power.

Now, he was left with no choice.

Chapter 676

Not even three minutes after Harvey reached the top of the tallest building that was nearest to him, an army helicopter arrived and picked him up before leaving immediately.

Below, everyone looked up to the sky and stared at the helicopter in shock and astonishment. It was a pity that the helicopter had flown too far away and they couldn't see who was in it.

Indeed, Harvey wouldn't make it in time even if he drove a sports car there. Now that he was on a helicopter, he could definitely reach the hotel in just a few minutes.

“In one minute, I want you to give me Grand Hotel W's structural diagram!”

Harvey's eyes were bloodshot, screaming for pure murder. This was the first time in three years since he had felt so angry.

...

In the presidential suite of Grand Hotel W.

Chapter 676

Mandy Zimmer and Wayne York were still in a standoff.

“Mandy Zimmer, there’s no use to delay any longer! You should understand. Every minute that passes adds to another minute of Harvey’s suffering...”

“Who knows. By now, maybe some of his other fingers are already cut off!”

Wayne was all smiles, his face demonic.

It was impossible for Mandy to misinterpret his words, she understood full well what he was talking about.

Even so, she still couldn’t allow herself to give in.

She had been pure and clean for so many years. Not even Harvey had touched her before. Yet, now...

She even thought of jumping off the building, and bring everything to an end.

Wayne’s back was facing the window as he

Chapter 676

scrutinized Mandy's looks with a malicious grin. "No worries, this is just a game..."

"I won't force you at all. I'll make you turn into a bitch voluntarily..."

Wayne's sinister grin widened. He looked like a perfect copy of the Devil himself.

"Oh, yes. Do you want me to play you a livestream and see how many of Harvey's fingers they've chopped off?"

Wayne was the head of the Yorks' connections to the underground. As such, he was highly knowledgeable about how those from the blacker parts of society execute their tasks.

He also knew very well on how to ruin a woman's last line of defence and crush them psychologically.

Mandy stared hard at Wayne, screaming, "You're nothing but a monster!"

Wayne grinned once more. "Honestly, you're not the first one to say that to me before."

Chapter 676

“However, I very much enjoy people calling me that. It just shows how much they fear me.”

Wayne hid both his hands behind his back as he advanced towards Mandy, one step at a time. Mandy watched him in horror and stumbled backwards, pressured by him.

“Why? What’s so good about a handicapped fool like Harvey? What is it that makes you so considerate towards him?”

“How am I, Wayne York, lacking in anywhere compared to that man?”

Wayne curled his lips as though he was smiling, even if he wasn’t.

“You’re inhumane!” Mandy shrieked. “How can you compare to him?”

Wayne took out his phone, smiling. “Joel, tell Tiger Ray to chop off Harvey’s arms and legs as well. Afterwards, send me a video of that.”

Chapter 677

Chapter 677

At his words, Mandy panicked and yelled, “I’ll listen to you and do whatever you want! Just don’t do anything else to Harvey!” ①

“Then, kneel! Strip everything off!”

Wayne grinned devilishly, waiting for his imagination to become reality.

Bang!

Right at that moment, the window behind him shattered with a deafening crash and broke into a million tiny pieces.

A silhouette appeared from the sky and landed in the room, who turned out to be none other than Harvey York.

Bang!

Chapter 677

Harvey stomped on Wayne's back and threw a hard kick towards Wayne, sending him flying.

Smash!

Wayne was hurtled away and his body slammed mercilessly against the wall. Blood streamed non-stop out of his injured body.

Wayne struggled to get up, but the next thing he knew, Harvey had already moved towards him.

Harvey roughly grabbed a fistful of Wayne's hair, and began viciously smashing Wayne's head against the floor without a single hint of pity.

Bang!

Blood splattered everywhere.

Wayne's nose was broken instantly.

Bang!

More gruesome noises played as Wayne started to bleed profusely, the red of his blood staining the

Chapter 677

floor and the door.

When Harvey slammed Wayne's head on the floor for the third time, Wayne was finally knocked out.

By then, Mandy had snapped out of her confused daze and immediately stopped Harvey.

"Don't...! Don't hit him anymore..." Mandy stammered shakily. "If you keep doing this, you'll kill him..." 1

Right now, the present Harvey felt like a complete stranger to her. His body was emanating a tyrannical, violent aura Mandy was unused to.

In Harvey's case, he had already lost his composure. His eyes were deranged, and there was only one thing that remained in his mind.

Those who dared to touch a dragon's reverse scale would die for certain!

Mandy was his reverse scale, his weakness, his bottom line. Anyone who dared to touch her would only have one ending, and that was absolute death! 1

Chapter 677

Mandy couldn't comprehend how Harvey had appeared so suddenly by crashing through the glass window.

This...

This was the fortieth or fiftieth floor of the building!

How did he get in there from the outside?

What did he actually work as? Everything about him was too mysterious!

"Let's go! Quick!"

Mandy dragged Harvey to leave. She was terrified that Harvey would really kill Wayne if this situation were to continue.

If anything happened to Wayne, the Zimmer family definitely wouldn't be able to bear the consequences that would soon come!

It was only after Harvey and Mandy left the scene did a few of the Yorks' thick-headed bodyguards

Chapter 677

entered the room.

Seeing Wayne York, one of the York's Famous Four who had power over Buckwood's underground dealings, was lying in his own pool of blood motionlessly, the bodyguards fell into horrified shock.

“Who did this!?”

“Who in Buckwood dares to touch anyone from the York family?”

“No matter who it is, even the King wouldn't be able to save him!”

“Someone really wants to die!”

...

Mandy too knew that they had caused a major trouble. ①

She knew the power of the Yorks.

Wayne York, one of the York's Famous Four.

Chapter 677

The York family was practically the ceiling of the South Light! They were everywhere and anywhere; from the business industry to the armed forces, the black market, and even the political arena!

With such vast power, it would be impossible for a tiny family like the Zimmers to stand a chance against them.

What did it matter if the Zimmers were currently under Sky Corporation?

It wouldn't be a difficult matter for the Yorks to crush and ruin the Zimmers completely.

Luckily, Mandy had reacted swiftly to the situation. Wayne didn't know who had hit him.

If either Wayne ended up dead or Harvey was identified, it'd be a huge problem!

"I don't care what happened just now!"

"We have to pretend as if none of this ever happened!"

Chapter 677

“I won’t ask any further questions about it as well!”

“But you have to promise me this, Harvey! Never bring this up when we reach home later!”

Mandy persuaded desperately, fearing for the negative consequences that could happen.

Telegram @chinesenovels

Chapter 678

Chapter 678

After reaching home.

Everyone ogled at Harvey York in awe and surprise. “What’s this? Didn’t they trouble you at all? What happens to these property documents now?”

Harvey didn’t answer. He revealed the IOU signed by Simon Zimmer and proceeded to rip it into pieces in front of all of the Zimmers.

“This matter is solved,” Harvey announced coldly. “There’s no need to bother about it anymore.”

“Huh? Everything’s solved, just like that? How did you do it?”

Simon and the rest were simply dumbfounded.

Mandy Zimmer at that moment only realised that nothing happened to Harvey at all and none of his

Chapter 678

fingers were missing, and he even got the IOU back.

Only Mandy Zimmer realized that nothing had happened to Harvey, and that none of his fingers were actually missing. He even managed to retrieve the IOU.

“I’ve found some evidence before reporting this matter. The place should be exposed by now.”

Harvey explained. He had calmed himself down and sent out a text in secret.

Not long after, someone from the authorities sent them a phone call.

Not only was the casino exposed, Simon’s case was also discovered to be a scam.

Every suspect was already detained for further investigation.

In addition, the authorities awarded Simon a few thousand dollars as a reward for this discovery.

After checking the numbers in his bank account, Simon was so excited that he jumped from the

Chapter 678

ground. He couldn't help but hug Harvey. "My good son-in-law, you're incredible! You even manage to resolve a huge problem like this!" ①

Now, Simon's impression of Harvey had risen slightly. He never thought this piece of trash could actually be so capable!

Lilian Yates, on the other hand, was so joyful that she was reduced to tears.

Only moments ago, the Zimmers were nearly destroyed, but now everything had returned back to normal.

Harvey saved the Zimmers all by himself, although he used a bit of connections to the authorities, this could be considered as his capability already.

Mandy was the only one who couldn't be happy.

She knew too many details of that incident, and she understood that the Yorks wouldn't let them off that easily.

In her eyes, the matter of losing a hundred million

Chapter 678

dollars was insignificant. Anything related to money could be solved, after all.

However, it was a different matter if the Yorks were offended. The danger such a situation brought was simply unthinkable.

Even if the family had Sky Corporation's backing, how much help would that be if they had to face the Yorks?

Perhaps the Zimmers would be abandoned once this matter came to light.

Mandy didn't dare to speak up about her worries to the Zimmers.

Once they returned to the Gardens Residence, she expressed her concerns to Harvey right away.

"I know." Harvey nodded.

"Then, what should we do next?" Mandy was so nervous that her pretty face turned pale. "The Yorks are going to find this out in the blink of an eye."

Chapter 678

Wayne York was one of the York's Famous Four. None of them were ordinary folk, especially Quinton York. He was someone who could be referred to as a legend.

Once Quinton York decided to act, it would only be a matter of time until the Zimmers met destruction.

Harvey chuckled. "Don't worry. I'll be here for everything."

If Harvey had said this before, Mandy wouldn't have believed a word of it.

Yet as she recalled the moment when he broke through the glass window and crashed into the room, she felt a sudden sense of security.

All of a sudden, she was not afraid anymore.

If anything happened, this man would defend her and stand guard in front of her.

The worst that could only happen was them dying together.

Chapter 678

...

In the Silver Nimbus Outer Courtyard.

Every member of the York family was in dead silence.

Wayne York had been beaten until he was half dead. The strongest medical team in South Light was urgently summoned to save him. Even the renowned Saint Clarke came to the rescue.

Despite this, Wayne had yet to regain his consciousness.

The Yorks were furious.

Yonathan York, the current head of the Yorks, had ignored their family matters for many years.

He would only pay attention over issues concerning life and death. Otherwise, he would stay hidden and leave everything to Quinton.

Today, he made a rare appearance. Seeing his son's

Chapter 678

horrible state, Yonathan emanated such an oppressive air that everyone around him struggled to breathe.

Telegram @chinesenovels

Chapter 679

Chapter 679

No one could replace Yonathan's position as the head of the Yorks, not even Harvey when he was at his peak.

Even as the Yorks' Famous Four took over most of the family's authority, he still managed to retain his position as the family head with ease.

This alone made evident how capable Yonathan York was.

In fact, rumor had it that he represented the Yorks and fought through numerous major wars and battles in the past.

A man like him may not have a widespread reputation in society, but his position among the inner Yorks was unimaginably high.

He had complicated relationships with personnels

Chapter 679

from the armed forces. It was said that he even knew those who were dubbed as gods of war within the military.

Ethan Hunt had undeniable control of the Sword Camp of South Light's military, so Yonathan couldn't use anyone working under Ethan Hunt.

The same could not be said for the other soldiers. Yonathan could easily send any of them to do his bidding.

At this moment, Yonathan spoke up with a low voice, "Who did this?"

Quinton who was dressed in a suit as usual, walked out from the side and replied lightly, "Uncle, why bother asking if you already know the answer...?"

"Currently in the whole city of Buckwood, who else would dare to go against us Yorks apart from that man?"

"He's always arrogant, and everyone's already used to it. If he's hit someone, the most we can do is let

Chapter 679

him be...”

“The most troublesome thing is, our family has already created a space for us here to gather the members of Buckwood’s underworld.”

“Yet, he took advantage of this fact and ruined our plans. This is an indirect attack towards us Yorks!”

Quinton’s face darkened, but no one knew what was truly going through his head.

Yonathan’s expression changed at Quinton’s words. After a while, he asked in his deep voice, “How come I’m not aware of such a plan?”

Quinton laughed. “Uncle, you’ve been ignoring the family for so many years in order to focus on religion. How could any of us dare to disturb you for matters that aren’t serious or important?”

“Our problem right now is, that man actually exposed the matter and let the authorities deal with it. We’re not sure about his intentions, but...”

“What action should we take?”

Chapter 679

“Should we just let it go, or...?”

Quinton ended his words with a soft chuckle, showing an expression that looked as if he couldn't care less and would have preferred peace.

Wayne and Stephen York were Yonathan's biological twin sons. Quinton didn't believe for a second that Yonathan would remain neutral after what had recently happened to Wayne.

Yonathan inhaled deeply, his expression complex. “Any news from the authorities?”

“The chief inspector of Buckwood called me just now. They knew about the place already, and that Wayne was beaten until he fell unconscious.”

“They advised us not to turn this matter into a big issue. They'll think of a way to remove our family's involvement with the scandal and play it off as if we had nothing to do with the place.”

“We just needed to pretend as if nothing happened.”

Chapter 679

Yonathan knitted his eyebrows slightly and said, “It’s almost grandmother’s one hundredth birthday. She is a faithful Christian and remained a strict vegetarian all these years, and she hasn’t stepped into society in a long while.”

“Now that she actually wants to go out for once, we can’t afford to start anything. Otherwise, the repercussions would be unimaginable...”

“But a member of the Yorks was beaten up and left in such a terrible state. If we do nothing, how can we live with ourselves?”

As he said this, Yonathan appeared courageous and awe-inspiring.

Quinton, on the other hand, snickered inwardly. If the person who got beaten up wasn’t Yonathan’s son, would this sly old fox even bother to take a stand?

Outwardly, Quinton put on a smile and said, “If this is unacceptable to you, Uncle, then why don’t we

Chapter 679

meet up with that man to settle our differences
once and for all?”

Telegram @chinesenovels

Chapter 680

Chapter 680

Yonathan York's intense gaze scrutinized Quinton York for a brief moment. Then, he chuckled. "Ah, Quinton. I've almost forgotten that you've been making decisions for all the major family-related matters in these past few years..."

"Now that you already have a plan in mind, naturally I won't oppose it."

"I dare not accept such a compliment," Quinton smiled lightly. "I'm just temporarily replacing you and wielding your authority as head of the family. I would gladly hand your power back to you anytime you wish for it."

Yonathan replied carelessly, "Since I've already passed my authority over to you, it'd be strange for me to take it back."

"I only hope that you'll do all you can if you ever

Chapter 680

decide to face that man.”

“Use my name and send a few letters to summon my old comrades, subordinates, and partners here ...”

At this, Quinton laughed quietly.

Finally, the old man was now willing to use his secret connections.

Although Quinton was unable to play with Harvey to his heart's content through Wayne, getting Yonathan to reveal his hidden connections was a decent enough turnabout.

Rumor had it that Yonathan's network was vast, and he had connections in every place. This included his old comrades from the armed forces, the present personnel from the military, renowned figures of the political world, well-off men from the underworld, as well as giants in the business industry...

Quinton was confident he could make these people

Chapter 680

into his own once he gathered them all.

How grand would it be if all of them appeared at the same time at Grandma York's one hundredth birthday celebration?

While the Yorks were basically the ceiling of South Light, at times it was necessary for them to flaunt their power and authority to the public. Otherwise, even nameless people on the same level as roadside strays would have the audacity to look down on them. How could they bear it?

Doubly so for that man... He had no right to degrade the Yorks!

...

For the next few days, Mandy's biggest concern didn't happen as she had expected.

She felt confused as ever. In the end, she went through many different people just to inquire about the whole matter.

Eventually, a friend working in the authorities

Chapter 680

secretly told her that because Harvey York was responsible for reporting the scandal to the police, the chief inspector asked them not to expose the Yorks' involvement with the gambling place in order for the Zimmers to remain safe.

Of course, this wasn't because the chief inspector looked up to Harvey. It was entirely due to his fear of not wanting to offend the Yorks. He wanted to keep the scandal under wraps as much as possible.

After knowing all of these, Mandy finally breathed out a sigh of relief. "No wonder Harvey was that confident. He knew from the start that the Yorks wouldn't dare to make a move!"

In actual fact, Harvey didn't know anything at all.

He was still waiting for the Yorks to make a move. After all, Yonathan and Wayne York were blood-related father and son. In Harvey's opinion, even if Quinton York could be patient, certainly Yonathan wouldn't be able to do the same... or would he?

When Yvonne Xavier informed Harvey the end

Chapter 680

result of this whole matter, Harvey was astonished.

“CEO, in a week it’ll be your grandmother’s 100th birthday ceremony.”

“It’s been a long time since she’s stepped foot into society.”

“Even the York family head and Quinton York wouldn’t dare ruin her 100th birthday ceremony...”

“This is probably the reason they didn’t make any moves yet.”

Yvonne handed Harvey a document to sign as she spoke.

“Oh? It’s time for my dear grandmother’s 100th birthday ceremony?” Harvey had a complex smile on his face. “I wonder how happy she’d be if the grandson who should be dead three years ago appeared and gave her a big birthday gift?”

Three years ago, Harvey left Buckwood. At one point, he nearly lost his life.

The York’s Famous Four were naturally the ones

Chapter 680

who arranged for it to happen, but there was a bigger power acting behind them. If not, how was it possible for them to fight Harvey in the past, what with their limited power?

Telegram @chinesenovels

Chapter 681

Chapter 681

Simon Zimmer and Lilian Yates treated Harvey York extremely well in recent days.

Perhaps it was due to their guilt, or that they felt sorry toward Harvey.

Harvey wasn't fussed. Seeing Mandy doing well was enough to satisfy him.

In the evening, Xynthia Zimmer visited the Gardens Residence.

“Brother-in-law, let me tell you something big! I have good news!”

Xynthia smiled.

Harvey asked curiously, “Good news? Are you getting married?”

“No way! Stop talking nonsense, okay? I don't even

Chapter 681

have a boyfriend. Are you the one who's going to marry me?"

Xynthia alluded to something and glanced at Mandy with a guilty look.

"What's the good news?" Harvey asked. "Hurry up and say it."

Xynthia was ecstatic and hugged Harvey affectionately. "Try guessing, Brother-in-law! If you're right, I'll give you a kiss as a reward..."

Something strange flashed through Xynthia's eyes as she spoke.

Harvey said indifferently, "I'm not interested in a little girl."

"You..." Xynthia was dissatisfied. She couldn't help but run to Mandy and whined, "Sister, look at Brother-in-law! He's such a boring man! He doesn't understand women at all!"

Mandy smiled as she watched the two argue. "You, stop teasing your brother-in-law. Just say it

Chapter 681

upfront.”

“Xynthia’s two favorite stars are coming to Buckwood. She’s been talking about it all night.”

Harvey frowned. “That’s the good news?”

Xynthia proudly stood up. “Yes! Both my man crush and my goddess are here! If this isn’t good news, what else is?”

“Oh.” Harvey nodded, uninterested.

Xynthia grinned when she saw Harvey’s indifferent look. “Brother-in-law, why are you upset? Are you jealous?”

“Why would I be jealous?” Harvey said. “Are you kidding me?”

“I’m telling you. You don’t have to be jealous. One of them is beautiful, and the other is handsome..”

“Come here, Brother-in-law. I’ll show you their pictures!”

Xynthia had already taken out her phone and was

Chapter 681

pointing at the screen as she spoke. “This is Yvette Yanes. Not only is she beautiful, but she also has a gorgeous body! She’s the hottest female star right now!”

Xynthia showed her phone to Harvey as she explained.

Harvey glanced briefly before remarking, “Not bad, but your sister is miles prettier than her!”

“Bah! Your beauty standards are one of a kind. Come and look again. This is my man-crush, Carter Coen. Don’t you think he’s handsome?!”

Harvey pushed Xynthia to the top floor and then closed the door.

It was finally quiet.

He had never been a fan of those so-called celebrities. To put it bluntly, to him, they just worked in the show business.

In Harvey’s opinion, scientists who worked hard to invent new technology for the country, as well as

Chapter 681

soldiers who defended the frontiers and fought on the battlefield for the sake of the nation's peace deserved acknowledgement much more.

Yet, only a few people knew about their achievements as they strove hard for the future of the motherland.

On the contrary, these actors and actresses were always making the headlines and trending topics. All people would talk about was their relationships. It was quite embarrassing, and he didn't know what to comment on this sad state of affairs.

Harvey knew little about what people normally talked about.

Nonetheless, he didn't care for it.

He wasn't attracted to any of the stars.

On the second floor.

Xynthia went around the balcony and then came down. She went to disturb Mandy again.

“Sister, do you know?”

Chapter 681

“It’ll be Grandmother York’s one hundredth birthday in a few days. The stars are invited by the Yorks to celebrate her birthday!”

“Godfather said that I can meet my goddess and man-crush by then...!”

Mandy was distracted, but still replied to Xynthia. “That’s pretty good.”

“Sister, I’ll get a few more invitations when the time comes. You have to come together with Brother-in-law!”

Xynthia was very excited.

Seeing her sister like this, Mandy didn’t want to be a buzzkill. She reluctantly said, “Okay, we’ll go.”

In truth, she was still worried about the incident with Wayne York. She didn’t have time to think about going to Grandmother Yorks’ birthday ceremony.

Chapter 682

Chapter 682

The next day.

On the rare days that Mandy Zimmer was finally free, Xynthia Zimmer clamored about how she wanted to buy a new set of clothes. Thus, Mandy took Harvey York to go shopping with her little sister.

Unfortunately, Xynthia had roving eyes and unique aesthetics. Despite going through several shopping malls, she still couldn't find what she wanted.

Although it was quite exhausting for Harvey, he liked this kind of life very much.

Everything was simple. Shopping, eating, and drinking. For him, the ordinary life of the common folk was full of sunshine, different from one spent fighting one another in pursuit of power.

Chapter 682

Unfortunately, destiny dictated that it was impossible for him to enjoy such a life.

While he enjoyed the experience, after shopping from early day until night, Harvey couldn't stand it anymore.

"I'm dying. We've been shopping the whole day and I still haven't eaten anything. I can't go on!"

"Anyway, we have to eat first! Otherwise, I won't shop anymore!"

At Harvey's insistence, Mandy and Xynthia could only agree.

"Buckwood Tower isn't far ahead. Let's go to the Spinning Restaurant for a meal. I'll make an appointment."

Harvey didn't bother to find another place. Going to his own restaurant for a meal would be the best. Moreover, it was quiet and peaceful. Maybe he could even find a place to lie down.

He had been walking for the entire day, carrying

Chapter 682

plastic bags in both hands. He was truly tired.

When the trio arrived at Buckwood Tower, they didn't expect to see so many people there. The guests crowding the place were ten times the usual amount.

Many of them wore colorful clothes, gripping glowing light sticks in their hands. They were flocking toward the same direction, shouting and screaming the name of their idols.

"Yvette Yanes! I love you!"

"Brother Carter Coen! I want to give birth to your child!"

"Ah, ah, ah, ah, ah!"

Various screams filled the air. The sheer level of noise was both disturbing and frustrating.

Harvey frowned, but Xynthia's face brightened up.

"I see! So, it turns out that my man crush and goddess are here!"

Chapter 682

“They’re doing shows at Buckwood Tower today?”

Xynthia dragged Harvey and Mandy forward in excitement. She wanted to squeeze through the crowd and get to the front.

Harvey didn’t object or say anything in protest. There was an elevator leading to Buckwood Tower’s Spinning Restaurant in the direction Xynthia was leading them to.

After entering the mall inside the Buckwood Tower, Harvey was overcome with dizziness.

This place was crowded with people from all directions, especially at the hollow square in the middle. A stage had been set up there. In a short while, the big stars that had arrived would probably be performing on stage.

The crowd had gathered because of the stars.

Aside from Yvette Yanes and Carter Cone, there were also other stars who had recently grown popular.

Chapter 682

Everyone was invited to Buckwood Tower to participate in Grandmother York's birthday.

It was said that Grandma York greatly enjoyed entertainment. Rumors said that the Yorks had invited half of the entertainment circle just for this occasion.

Since these stars managed to enter a top-tier city like Buckwood, they wouldn't let the opportunity slip and simply stand idly by.

It was to be expected that they would go around to familiarize themselves with the city and make some money along the way, before attending the birthday banquet.

Today's event at Buckwood Tower was one of their attractions. Right now, there were at least about two thousand people gathered here.

There were still so many who couldn't get inside. Harvey found it hard to believe how crazy these die-hard fans could get.

Chapter 682

“Yvette Yanes!”

“Carter Coen!”

With all kinds of ecstatic voices screaming about, the fans' excitement only intensified. Xynthia blended into the crowd almost instantly.

A large number of security guards stood in front of the stage. They guarded the surrounding area, blocking the entrance of crazed fans from the outside. Or so it seemed.

Harvey glanced indifferently. He then frowned. “Where's Xynthia?”

In a blink of an eye, Xynthia was gone. 4

Chapter 683

Chapter 683

“Xynthia? She said she’s going to see her goddess and man-crush. She told us to go and eat first. She’ll come by herself later.”

“She’s a big girl. She won’t be lost. Just let her be.”

“You can go up first and have a rest.”

Mandy Zimmer said, smiling. She saw that Harvey was a little irritable.

“Alright.”

Harvey didn’t talk too much. Instead, he went straight to the front of the elevator.

Just when he was about to enter, a few security guards hurried over.

“Both of you can’t get into the elevator!”

The security said coldly, blocking them with his

Chapter 683

hand.

Harvey frowned slightly. "Why?"

"Today, all elevators can only be used by the staff and crew members. Ordinary people aren't allowed!" The security guard explained. "This is to prevent paparazzi from getting in."

Harvey said indifferently, "This is the elevator leading to the Spinning Restaurant at Buckwood Tower. It has nothing to do with your event, right?"

"Who told you that? Later, some big stars will be going to the Spinning Restaurant for dinner. Of course, we can't let anyone else go there!" The security replied coldly.

Harvey laughed. "You mean these stars have the privilege while we common people don't even have the right to eat, is that it?"

"Right!"

"To ensure the safety of the celebrities, you're not allowed to use the elevator or go for dinner."

Chapter 683

The security spoke indifferently.

Harvey thought for a while. It seemed that his Spinning Restaurant had been fully booked.

Just when he wanted to make a call and cancel the reservation, Mandy whispered, "Harvey, why don't you just go out and eat somewhere else?"

"I'll find Xynthia. Let's go home first. We'll come visit again next time."

Harvey considered her suggestion for a while, and then nodded. He was a reasonable person. Most importantly, since Mandy said so, of course he wouldn't refuse.

He and Mandy turned around and left.

The security guards behind him sneered. They probably called him a peasant or something along those lines. However, Harvey couldn't be bothered to care.

After walking back several distances, a large group

Chapter 683

of people suddenly appeared from every direction and squeezed into the mall. Mandy and Harvey were separated from each other by accident.

When the crowd had passed, Harvey was unable to find Mandy.

Harvey only discovered that Mandy was trapped in the sea of people after walking away and calling her.

“Harvey, there’s too many people! It’ll be difficult for us to meet. How about this? I’ll call Xynthia, we’ll go back separately and meet at home.” Mandy’s voice was full of helplessness.

“Okay. You have to be careful.” Harvey was also speechless. He rarely went out shopping with his wife. Why did they always encounter so many problems?

After hanging up, Harvey walked around the mall several times. He realized that there was a large crowd everywhere. He looked around, and it seemed the only way to get out of the mall was to cross the stage to reach the entrance of the opposite door.

Chapter 684

Chapter 684

“What do you mean?” Harvey York said indifferently.

“The guests today are all major superstars. If something happens to any of them, can a peasant like you afford to pay the consequences?”

The security chief questioned.

Harvey said coldly, “If I remember correctly, this is a public place, right? Can’t I walk past the stage? None of this makes any sense.”

“Normally you can, but not today!”

The security chief spat coldly.

“You’re arbitrarily taking up public resources. You even forbid the people to pass in a public place! You sure have a lot of power!” Harvey said, his voice

Chapter 684

deep.

“Yes, we have great power. After all, we have big stars backing us! The money that they earned in just a few minutes of showing up is an amount you’d never make in your entire life!”

“This is privilege!” The security chief shouted.

Harvey sneered, “And what if I insist going over?”

“You can try! This area is blocked off!”

Soon, more than a dozen security guards came over. A total of thirty people surrounded Harvey.

Upon seeing this scene, Harvey said icily, “Okay, then I’ll try.”

He made a call and said nonchalantly, “Yvonne, let the person in charge of the Spinning Restaurant come to see me in three minutes. Close the shopping mall in Buckwood Tower today.”

All the security guards laughed as they listened to Harvey’s words.

Chapter 684

Demanding the person in charge of the Spinning Restaurant to see him?

Ceasing the shopping mall's operations?

Who did this guy think he was?

With just one glance, it was obvious that the total amount of everything he was wearing didn't exceed fifteen dollars. Yet, he had the audacity to act so pretentiously here. He truly didn't know where he stood.

Didn't he ask the person in charge of the Buckwood Tower to come down as well?

Then let's wait for three minutes and see.

This matter escalated quite fast. Soon, someone from the star crew noticed it.

Several of the celebrities' managers came over and asked what was going on.

One of them was a woman named Yuna Shaw. She

Chapter 684

was Yvette Yanes' manager and a prominent figure in the entertainment industry.

It was said that initially, this event couldn't be held in Buckwood Tower's shopping mall. However, she used her connections to contact the senior management of Buckwood Tower to greenlight the event.

That executive had mentioned that she could use the place as she liked today, which meant that she had the final say.

Yuna scrutinized Harvey carefully. After making sure that he didn't look like a wealthy man, she said coldly, "What's the matter with you? Can't you see that this area is off limits?"

Harvey sneered, "Who gave you the power to block off this area?"

Yuna was a little stunned by Harvey's question.

Wasn't this the norm?

It was expected for stars to take up some space

Chapter 684

whenever they came out to perform. Wasn't it normal to block the place?

Everyone had agreed to this rule. No one had ever come out to criticize anything.

It could be said that doing so was also a means of guaranteeing the celebrities' enigmatic persona. In this way, ordinary people could not hope to reach them. In the eyes of the fans, the celebrities were seen as superior gods.

Everyone seemed to think that this was the norm. Therefore, no one had ever questioned this.

"Today, the most popular stars of Country H are holding an event here. They're noble. Of course, safety is very important..."

"If anyone can pass freely where these artists are located, who would be responsible if something goes wrong?"

Yuna thought about it and said coldly.

Harvey laughed. "So, you're saying that these

Chapter 684

artists are upper-class elites?”

“Yes, you can say that. After all, their lives are unreachable for people like you!”

Yuna spoke very seriously.

“My friend, I advise you not to make trouble. Otherwise, I’ll send you to the police!”

Telegram @chinesenovels

Chapter 685

Chapter 685

Originally, Harvey's expression was normal. When Yuna spoke to him in that way, he couldn't help but reply in a frosty tone, "I just wanted to take the elevator to go up for a meal. You said that the area is blocked off and you wouldn't let me go up."

"Fine, I'm not eating anymore."

"Now I want to go out, and you're still blocking my way. What do you want me to do? Do you want me to fly out from here?"

At Harvey's words, Yuna spat coldly, "I don't care how, but you better get out right this instant!"

"Get out, is it?" Harvey nodded. "Let's see who'll be doing that!"

When they heard Harvey's bragging, Yuna and the rest burst into laughter.

Chapter 685

This guy was kicking them out? Was he out of his mind?

Just when the managers were about to let security drive Harvey away, a few stars standing not far away came over. The fans began to cheer.

Yuna hurriedly walked over towards the approaching stars.

The man and woman who were leading at the front were extremely dazzling.

Even as they stood among the rest of the celebrities, they remained incredibly eye-catching.

The man was wearing a black T-shirt and a pair of overalls. He looked very fair and somewhat feminine, and was tossing a basketball around with his hands.

As for the woman, she wore a simple white dress. Nonetheless, it outlined her exquisite figure, and her beautiful face appeared to be even more attractive.

Chapter 685

These two people were currently the most popular stars, Carter Coen and Yvette Yanes.

At this moment, Yvette whispered, "Sister Yuna, what's the matter?"

"This person was trying to go through the stage. We're stopping him." Yuna sneered. "And now, he even wants us to go away."

Yvette thought for a while and said, "Sister Yuna, this is just a trivial matter. Maybe he wants to leave because there's something urgent. Let him go."

"No, the venue's just been cleaned up. I'll be showing my basketball skills on the stage in a while." Carter Coen suddenly intervened coldly. "What if he got some sand on the stage and it affects my performance?"

"Where's the security? What are you waiting for? Quickly take him away!"

Carter became popular by showcasing his basketball skills in his performances. In truth, he

Chapter 685

didn't enjoy basketball at all. On the contrary, he was obsessed with cleanliness. Therefore, he often pressured the staff into making sure that the stage was absolutely clean every time he performed.

When he heard some random person wanted to go through the place where he would be performing, he grew livid.

Yvette glanced at Harvey and continued, "Or, could you just go by the side?"

"No! This kind of beggar is way too shabby! He'd certainly affect my performance!"

"Don't you see how amazing we are? We don't know what a person like him could do. What if he comes after us?"

"I know you're kind, Yvette. But if he turns out to be malicious, there'll be trouble!"

Carter was very determined.

Yvette wasn't as tough as him. She wanted to help Harvey, but didn't know what to say.

Chapter 685

Just when the security was about to do something to Harvey...

There was a sudden rush of footsteps as about four to five middle-aged men in suits ran over.

Carter was about to speak when he saw these men approaching, but Yuna hurriedly stopped him.

Instead, she walked forward with a smile and said, “Manager, I don’t know what brought you here. We have prepared the VIP stands, please...”

Judging from Yuna’s tone, these people must be the executives of Buckwood Tower.

Carter also smiled and said, “Gentlemen, I have several autographs here. If you need them...”

Unexpectedly, these executives completely ignored them. Instead, they looked around the field. Their eyes fell onto Harvey after a while. The complexion of the middle-aged man who was standing at the front changed drastically. He quickly walked over, dropping his hands. He stammered, “You...you’re

Chapter 685

here...”

Telegram @chinesenovels

Chapter 686

Chapter 686

At this moment...

Carter Coen was dumbfounded.

Yvette Yanes was dumbfounded.

Even Yuna Shaw was slightly startled.

Doubly so for the security guards. In that very second, all of them fell into hushed silence.

The middle-aged man who was acting so respectful toward Harvey was not just any person, but was in fact the general manager of Buckwood Tower. His position was equivalent to the owner of Buckwood Tower, yet he was so respectful in front of this man.

Most importantly, those standing behind him could see his cold sweat soaking his clothes.

This was simply unimaginable!

Chapter 686

Harvey had asked the person in charge of Buckwood Tower to get down within three minutes. In the end, the man really did come down within three minutes.

Previously, Yuna dared to be arrogant in front of Harvey. Now, she dared not.

She and the other celebrities' managers knew how things worked in this circle. They understood all too well the power of money.

In front of ordinary people, they had privilege and could act arrogant.

However, in front of the rich and powerful, they were simply actors.

They had to be respectful while facing the executives of Buckwood Tower. Yet, this man... even the executives were so respectful toward him. Who the hell was he?

Meanwhile, Carter Coen and the other stars felt a little breathless.

Chapter 686

Even if they were stars, what did it matter to the rich? These were the big shots!

“You’re one minute late...” Harvey said, his tone indifferent.

The general manager of the Buckwood Tower almost kneeled when he heard the words. He stammered, trembling, “C...CEO, I’ve tried my best. I’m sure you’ve also seen that there are too many people here today...”

“I really couldn’t squeeze through...”

When the general manager spoke like this, the other executives were struck with fear.

Buckwood Tower was also one of the businesses under Sky Corporation. If these executives didn’t know the identity of this young man just now, then they would’ve understood it this very moment.

This was the legendary...

The place grew dead silent when everyone heard

Chapter 686

how the manager addressed this man.

Carter, Yuna, Yvette, and the security guards looked at Harvey with a shocked expression.

C...CEO?!

What?

He was actually the CEO?

Such a young CEO?!

Harvey casually looked ahead and said indifferently, "If I remember correctly, Buckwood Tower's positioning was a high-end shopping mall. This place emphasized on making people feel at home and provide great service..."

"When did the high-end shopping mall start allowing some mediocre artists here? Who gave the permission?"

Harvey didn't spare a glance at Carter and the other celebrities when he said these words.

However, Carter and the others all turned pale at

Chapter 686

the moment.

They considered themselves upper-class elites, and felt that they were superior and privileged!

Yet now, Harvey said they were infamous clowns right in their faces!

Yuna had been in the circle for a long time. She understood that she had dug herself into a pit this time.

For a moment, her mind was like paste, full of mess.

Yvette's face was also pale. She was at a loss.

Carter, on the other hand, suddenly slammed the basketball in his hands and spat angrily, "Do you think you can call me a clown just because you're a CEO?"

"You think you can have so many people coming to this broken mall if it wasn't for me?"

"Believe it or not! I just need to say one word, and my fans would ruin this whole place!"

Chapter 686

“A CEO is pretending in front of me! What the hell?!” 4

Telegram @chinesenovels

Chapter 687

Chapter 687

Shock!

Everyone was shocked!

No one expected that Carter Coen would suddenly go crazy.

In a way, this was to be expected. As a popular star, he had always been held up high by people wherever he went.

Even some CEOs had asked him to be the face for their products and treated him nicely.

After his initial shock, Carter came to the conclusion that Harvey, the CEO was nothing remarkable.

Harvey smiled.

“Do you think no one will come here without you?”

Chapter 687

“With just a word, you could make your fans ruin this place?”

“Are you threatening me?”

“Am I threatening you?” Carter cursed. “Fool, can’t you tell?”

“Interesting.” Harvey smiled. He glanced at the general manager and said casually, “I’m asking you. Who rented the place out for them to use...?”

The general manager wiped away his cold sweat and stammered, shuddering all the while, “CEO, we didn’t rent...we borrowed them the place to use...”

“Meaning, it’s free?”

“Yes.”

“Is there a contract?”

“No...”

The general manager was a little confused, at loss as to what to do.

Chapter 687

Harvey made another phone call. This time he contacted Ethan Hunt and teased, "Ethan, someone has forcibly taken the mall of my Buckwood Tower, and is planning to let people ruin my place. Shouldn't you come and uphold justice for my sake?"

"What?! I'll be there soon!" Ethan's voice came out.

Everyone heard the conversation between Harvey and Ethan.

Carter laughed.

"Who are you trying to scare? You're even looking for someone to intervene on your behalf? Even if the police come, do you think they have the guts to take me in? Aren't they afraid that my fans will destroy the police station?"

"I'll give you a chance now. If you kneel and apologize to me, I'll forget it."

"Otherwise, I'll call on my fans tomorrow to boycott you and let you run out of business!"

Carter believed he had tremendous influence, so his

Chapter 687

tone was full of arrogance.

A few minutes later, a major event occurred outside of Buckwood Tower's premises.

Armored vehicles gathered outside one after another, moving at a rapid pace.

The next second, fully armed sergeants in dashing military uniforms jumped off the armored vehicles one by one.

Ethan Hunt, who led the troop, announced sternly, "Attention! This is the last assessment of your enlistment! Someone intends to attack Prince York ...!"

"We must take action quickly and secure the perimeters to protect Prince York!"

"Secure the place!"

"Secure the place!"

Under the mystified gazes from the passers-by, the

Chapter 687

premises of Buckwood Tower was immediately secured.

Right after that, a loud sound rang in the air.

“Attention everyone! Attention everyone!”

“This is the South Light Army. We have to launch a military blockade at Buckwood Tower in order to arrest suspected terrorists! Please cooperate with us!”

As the announcement went on, the gates of Buckwood Tower were opened one by one. The sergeants all rushed in.

“Everyone, please stay where you are and don't move. We will guarantee your safety...”

“Please cooperate with us! Cooperate with us!”

The entering sergeants instantly secured the place within a few minutes.

The die-hard fans, who were initially enthusiastic, calmed down and began sporting looks of panic.

Chapter 687

Under the sergeants' orders, they left the mall one by one.

Soon, only the security guards and star crew members remained.

They huddled together in a small circle, shuddering in fear.

Right now, everyone couldn't wait to choke Carter Coen to death!

Couldn't he just stay low-key?

Did he actually threaten to smash the mall? And he even said that he wanted to call on his fans to boycott the mall?

Was he out of his mind?

Chapter 688

Chapter 688

Not a moment later, Ethan Hunt brought in a dozen of well-trained sergeants to the front of the stage.

Under the horrified gazes of the group of stars, they approached Harvey.

Ethan Hunt knew Harvey's habit. He didn't speak even after Ethan bowed. Instead, his cold eyes fell on Carter and the celebrities.

Apparently, these people would be taken down immediately the moment Harvey gave the order.

Army?

Were they truly from the army?

Carter, who was feeling complacent not too long ago, was now filled with confusion.

He never expected that the man in front of him

Chapter 688

wasn't just your run-of-the-mill CEO.

With one random call, the military came and secured the premises. As of now, his fans were being sent out one by one...

At this moment, even if he wanted to get away, it would be difficult.

Let alone calling his fans to destroy the mall!

The people in the army were different from the police inspectors.

Inspectors might still care about public opinion, but the army couldn't be bothered by such trivialities. They only had orders in their minds.

What was the identity of this person...?

At this moment, Carter Coen wussed out. He truly wussed out.

“These brats are pretty good...”

Harvey could tell at a glance that these sergeants

Chapter 688

were the ones who had come to participate in the enlistment assessment.

These sergeants knew of Harvey's identity as they had already seen Harvey before.

Each of them stood up and raised their heads in front of Harvey. Their looks of admiration couldn't be concealed.

From this, it was made obvious how amazing and powerful Harvey's identity was.

Harvey nodded in acknowledgement. His eyes then fell on Carter and the rest of his crew, still smiling faintly. "Aren't you going to smash my mall? Aren't you calling your fans to boycott me? I'll give you a chance to do it now. How about it?"

"Don't think that I don't dare... Even if I destroyed your mall, what can you do to me...?"

Although Carter was trembling, he was still trying to act tough.

Harvey looked at him. A sudden smile painted his

Chapter 688

lips. "Ethan, if someone destroys the public property, what will you do?"

Ethan put his right hand on the hilt of the knife around his waist and said coldly, "I'll kill him on the spot."

Harvey nodded and made way for him with a 'please' gesture. He then said indifferently, "Do it. We're very busy. Please hurry up..."

"It'll take time to clean up the scene later."

Carter almost fainted after hearing Harvey's words.

Yuna Shaw and others broke out in a cold sweat.

This guy was too cruel!

Carter threatened to ruin his place, and in return he was going to kill Carter on the spot!

This guy must have fought on the battlefield!

Otherwise, he wouldn't dare to say such a thing.

Carter, who was still very arrogant moments

Chapter 688

before, was now reduced to fear.

When he threatened people like this in the past, everyone would quickly hurry over and apologize to him. He could still put himself above others and throw a tantrum.

Right now, he could only shiver. He looked at Yuna as if he was asking for help, hoping that she could solve the matter.

Yuna's face was also pale. Nonetheless, there was nothing she could do. She was the person in charge of this event. She could only grit her teeth and said, "CEO..."

"Your, your status is honorable. You don't need to concern yourself with us inexperienced actors... Just treat us as a fart in the wind and let us go..."

"Are you begging me?" Harvey said coldly.

"Yes..." Yuna was taken aback for a moment.

"Why beg me?" Harvey asked.

"CEO, what do you mean? You're the boss here.

Chapter 688

Things will happen the way you want. Who else could we beg to other than you?”

Yuna truly wanted to associate herself with Harvey now. Sure enough, she knew how to speak and flashed him a fawning smile.

Telegram @chinesenovels

Chapter 689

Chapter 689

In the next second Harvey began to speak, but his tone was icy.

“You begged me because my status is higher than you, my position is higher than yours, and I’m more powerful than you. Isn’t that right?”

“Yes, yes, yes. This is natural...” Yuna nodded so fast, looking like she was pounding garlic.

“But if I don’t have this status and position, wouldn’t you have sent me to the police by now?”

“If I were an ordinary person, then I don’t even have the right to walk out of this mall?”

“You’re just celebrities, but you act so arrogant and domineering. You’re not that popular and famous, but you thought you are upper-class elites?!”

“What a bully! How could people like you be called

Chapter 689

a divine man? Goddess?”

“And you even had the audacity to lecture me about privileges? There are more people with privileges these days. If everyone is the same as you and think that they’re the king of the world over an insignificant achievement, wouldn’t society fall into a mess?!”

“It’s okay for you to hold an event. It’s okay for you to meet your fans.”

“However, is it necessary for you to block the whole mall? And you even did so with such righteousness, thinking your actions are justified?”

“Do you think so many people came here just to see your faces?”

“Many people rarely take a rest. They came here to have a meal or go shopping. Why does everyone have to lose the right to eat and shop here because of you?”

“If I want to use my privilege, I won’t say any of

Chapter 689

this nonsense. I'd hold you accountable for taking up the mall privately without my consent. I will immediately ruin you. Do you think I can't do that?"

"What's even worse is that you're obviously wrong. Yet you still threaten to destroy the mall and call your fans to boycott this place!"

"Who do you think you are to use your innocent fans for your ulterior goals?"

"The so-called idols should be a role model for all fans. But look at you! Which of you looks like a real idol?"

"You're an immoral deviant, always thinking that you're superior and that you're above others. You even went ahead and labelled people this and that. Don't you feel ashamed?"

Yuna Shaw and the others lowered their heads, unable to say anything under Harvey's rapid questioning.

Indeed, they always did whatever they wanted

Chapter 689

when holding commercial performances and never considered the convenience of the ordinary folk.

As for the fans, in their eyes, they were just idiots that could be exploited at will.

To exploit and use as they wanted.

When did they even consider what they should do as an idol?

If they hadn't encountered such a situation today, they would continue to be arrogant to the end.

"CEO, we were wrong. We realized what we did was wrong! We shouldn't take up too many public resources..."

"And we shouldn't use our fans at will..."

"I assure you that such a thing wouldn't repeat in the future."

Yuna was the first to apologize.

Harvey glanced at everyone and said indifferently, "

Chapter 689

The mall must restore its original order. From this moment onward, this place is no longer allowed to hold any large-scale commercial events...”

“What?!”

Everyone was dumbfounded at his words.

They had arranged all commercial performances to be held at Buckwood Tower for the next few days.

Now, they had to call off in all the performances due to his orders. Ultimately, they'd end up making a lot less money.

“This includes all of the large shopping malls and shopping centers in Buckwood. I won't allow anyone to hold any commercial events that would encroach on a large number of public resources during the holidays. Spread this word and say it's my order.”

“Yes, yes, yes. I'll go make the arrangements!”

The general manager broke out in a cold sweat.

The stars were stunned.

Chapter 689

They never expected that their incoming commercial performances in Buckwood would have to be canceled because of such a little thing.

Was this for real?

Telegram @chinesenovels

Chapter 690

Chapter 690

Finally, Harvey York turned to Carter Coen.

“To be a man, we stick to our words. If you want to destroy my mall, just do it. If you refuse to act on your words, you’re nothing but a sissy!”

Carter’s face turned pale, and the corner of his eyes twitched.

Indeed, he was a flower boy. His biggest taboo was someone calling him a sissy.

However, the one who said it was this man. He didn’t dare to argue, and could only nod and bow.

In the end, Harvey left and went to the Spinning Restaurant to have a meal. If he didn’t, he would certainly starve to death.

Ethan Hunt also led his team and left. Everyone

Chapter 690

dispersed.

The shopping mall was quickly restored its original order.

Soon, Xynthia Zimmer also arrived at the Spinning Restaurant and found Harvey.

“Brother-in-law, you didn’t see it just now! It seems that a big shot was here. He wanted to go out but was stopped by those security guards!”

“Then, he immediately canceled all the commercial performances in Buckwood. I won’t be able to see my idol in the next few days!”

Xynthia was also in the crowd just now, so she was able to witness the situation albeit very roughly.

“They deserve it,” Harvey replied indifferently.

Xynthia giggled and said, “Just let them be...”

“Brother-in-law, I heard that the big shot was in his early twenties. However, he exuded an intimidating aura. Do you know who he is?”

Chapter 690

“It was me,” Harvey said calmly.

“Brother-in-law, forget it. I know you’re great, but still, you can’t compare to him!”

“He’s the one who could immediately summon Lieutenant Colonel Ethan from the Sword Camp here with just a word!”

“I did participate in the enlistment assessment ceremony of the Sword Camp...”

“If I guessed it correctly, the young man just now should be a big shot in the army...”

“If I can get to know him, maybe I can reach the top ...”

Xynthia lamented how she had missed the opportunity to meet the big shot, a look of regret coloring her face.

She thought of another thing and then said, “Oh, right. Brother-in-law, my godfather and godmother will take me to Grandma York’s

Chapter 690

birthday ceremony in a few days.”

“I got a few more invitation cards. How about you come together, too?”

Harvey didn't refuse.

“Okay, no problem. I'll definitely go, then.”

“Let's eat first.”

In the South Light Army.

Ethan Hunt had just dismissed the troop and wanted to return to his dormitory. However, he met another person on the way.

The Captain General in the South Light Army,
Lucian Truscott.

The position of Captain General in the army was above the Lieutenant Colonel. Above it was the Admiral.

However, the Sword Camp had a special status in

Chapter 690

the South Light Army. Therefore, even though Lucian Truscott was the Captain General, he still had to be very polite when he met Ethan.

At this moment, he stepped forward and smiled. “Old man Hunt, it’s really hard to see you!”

Lucian Truscott and Ethan Hunt once went to the battlefield together in the same battalion. Both of them were very close to each other.

“I went out to settle something just now. What’s the matter?” Ethan asked curiously.

Lucian took out a gilded invitation card and smiled. “The Yorks are going to hold the centenary of Grandma York’s birthday. They invited us to participate this time.”

“I helped you receive your invitation. I specially came over to give you the card.”

Ethan was stunned for a moment. However, he still smiled. “The centenary of Grandma York’s birthday?”

Chapter 690

“Yes, many of our military friends in the past will also go together!”

“It’s to congratulate Grandma York!”

“It’s also because Elder York was an old member of the South Light Army!” ③

Telegram @chinesenovels

Chapter 691

Chapter 691

“He sent us the invitations himself, it’s no good if we don’t attend!” Lucian Trescott said, as this matter it was something that had to be done.

“Fine, we’ll all go together,” Ethan Hunt said.

Soon, the Yorks found out that Ethan Hunt would attend Grandma York’s birthday banquet.

Yonathan York was relieved when he received the news.

“Looks like this old man still has some use left in him, somehow...”

“Even though Ethan Hunt is just a lieutenant colonel, the Sword Camp is the military’s core in South Light. The military’s soul...”

“Since Ethan Hunt willingly joined the Yorks, this

Chapter 691

means that the military force in all of South Light belongs to us.”

“After her birthday banquet, the Yorks will rival the formal glory we had three years prior!”

Quinton York chuckled and said, “Congratulations, sir! Praise to the family head!”

“Even after that man had left, the Yorks were still considered to be the top family in all of South Light.”

“But a lot of lowly families have been trying to covet our place in South Light with the help of other top-rated families.”

“However, everything will be different after her birthday banquet...”

The Yorks all looked at each other with a glimmer in their eyes.

In all these past years, the Yorks’ peak was when that man had authority in the family.

In that amount of time, he made a dying family

Chapter 691

return to its former glory.

The family once again became the peak in all of South Light, the one true top family.

There were even rumors for those past few years saying there was a chance the Yorks could even aim to be one of the top-rated families in Country H.

However, the Yorks were soon embroiled in internal conflicts and that man was forced away from the family. Subsequently, they were held back from gaining that status.

Under the control of the four Yorks' in the past three years, the Yorks had barely retained their status as the top family in South Light using all of their strength. Unfortunately, they could no longer muster any strength to further climb the ranks.

Ethan Hunt's arrival symbolized that the Yorks had once again regained control of the military force in South Light. This was splendid news to them.

Basically, now that the Yorks had immense power

Chapter 691

in all of South Light, they might be able to take control of Country H in the future.

Yonathan York showed a wide grin as he scanned the crowd and said, "We should spread word of this. Tell everyone that there will be very important people attending Grandma York's hundredth birthday!"

Very soon, the elite social circles in Buckwood had all known about the matter regarding Grandma York's one hundredth birthday.

The most important thing was that Ethan Hunt would be joining.

After Ethan Hunt became the lieutenant colonel of the Sword Camp, he never accepted any invitations from any family.

He was the head of the four Gods of War. His significance was extraordinary, but he was not biased toward any family and represented the stance of South Light's military as absolutely neutral.

Chapter 691

Yet, such a man was actually attending a birthday banquet hosted by the Yorks.

It was safe to say that the families with intentions of climbing the ranks at the beginning had mixed feelings.

So what if their families were wealthy beyond belief?

So what if they had connections all over South Light?

Families that could climb ranks did not even matter at that point.

Ethan Hunt could easily surpass all those achievements.

At night, Quinton York visited Yonathan York's room.

“Sir, I've just received the news. The Yates family will be attending the birthday banquet as well.”

“The Yates family...”

Chapter 691

Yonathan York laughed coldly.

“In other news, there’s someone else's name on the guest list.” Quinton York said calmly. “You’ll be surprised to hear who it is...”

“Who is it?”

“Harvey York.”

Quinton York let out a faint smile.

“Him? Is he willing to return to us? Or does he want ...?”

Telegram @chinesenovels

Chapter 692

Chapter 692

Yonathan York frowned slightly. He and Quinton York understood that this guest was none other than Harvey York.

They had no intention of inviting Harvey York, yet he still made it in the guest list.

“Let him come!”

In the next moment, Yonathan York had a revelation.

“Since he’s already back in Buckwood, there will be a time when we officially meet each other again. This banquet will be fitting...”

“Of course, he already let us know that he’s been plotting his revenge in secret during these three years.”

“The outsiders all thought that he became some

Chapter 692

filth living a life worse than a stray dog in a small family like the Zimmers... At this point, it's obvious that he's been making his own arrangements and preparations in the dark.”

“This banquet will be the time we meet him once again after three years. If the time is right, we'll deal with him after the banquet is over.”

Yonathan York was calm, as if everything that he said was natural.

Quinton York chuckled and said, “If the family demands it, of course I'll be the one to carry out the task.”

“I've said it before. Now that you're in control, Quinton, the entire family also acknowledges you as their leader.”

“Dealing with that man will be the same as dealing with the thorn in your heart.”

“I'm doing this for you...”

Yonathan York did his best to persuade Quinton

Chapter 692

York.

Quinton York remained the same. Then gave a slight chuckle and said, "Since you've done all the preparations, I should thank you, sir."

"Moving on, I hired about a dozen medical experts from Wolsing to operate on Wayne. I'll make sure that after a week, he'll be able to attend the banquet."

"You've done too much, Quinton. I cannot thank you enough. I'll have to ask you to take care of my two immature sons for me." Yonathan York said with relief.

"Don't worry, sir. I'll take good care of them."

...

After leaving Yonathan York's room, Quinton York had a cold expression on his face.

"That sly old fox, wanting me to deal with that man ..."

"Whether you're the one using me, or the other

Chapter 692

way around...”

“We’ll see about that.”

...

Yonathan York’s joyful face dissipated in his room.
A hint of ridicule flashed in his eyes.

Even if his son was beaten up to a pulp, it seemed
like this was a part of his plan.

Nobody could figure out the man who had
relinquished his position of the Yorks’ family head.

...

In the inner parts of the Silver Nimbus Courtyard.

In a courtyard on top of a river full of birds chirping,
there were pavilions and verandas following the
path of the river.

Queenie York was wearing a white dress without
makeup, stepping toward the innermost part of the
courtyard with light footsteps.

Chapter 692

The place was full of mist, but it was not damp at all and exuded a relaxing vibe.

After reaching at the end where the Pavilion of the Goddess was located, Queenie York casually sat on a futon made out of grass.

After a long while, a crack opened up at the entrance of the pavilion. A hoarse but fierce voice of an old lady sounded from the inside.

“Queenie, is that you? You haven’t visited in a few days...”

“Grandma York.”

Queenie flashed a devastatingly beautiful smile.

“I just received news that man will be attending your birthday banquet.”

“That man...”

Cough, cough, cough!

A series of hard coughs echoed from inside the

Chapter 692

pavilion.

“Why is that unscrupulous grandson coming back ...?”

“Is he trying to destroy the entire family?”

“Queenie! If he dares to come here again, don't let him get out alive.”

Queenie York frowned slightly. After a while, she dropped into a bow.

“Yes!”

Telegram @chinesenovels

Chapter 693

Chapter 693

At the top floor of Sky Corporation, the CEO's office.

Harvey York was discussing matters with Yvonne Xavier.

Ethan Hunt came to the place discreetly, then reported to Harvey about his invitation to Grandma York's birthday banquet.

"That old woman wanted to control the military force in South Light years ago..."

"Your arrival this time has a significant meaning for her." Harvey York ridiculed. "Looks like Lieutenant Colonel Ethan will be the most important guest in her birthday banquet!"

Yvonne Xavier smiled and said, "Lieutenant Colonel Ethan has been serving the military for many years. He doesn't accept any invitation from any major

Chapter 693

families. His attendance this time will have even the Yorks be filled with pride...”

Ethan Hunt laughed bitterly. “Sir York, Miss Xavier, please stop joking about me.”

Ethan Hunt continued speaking.

“In other news, my comrades in arms from Wolsing brought me some new information.”

“The Yorks have hired a dozen medical experts to operate on Wayne York. They’ll arrive tonight.”

“Tonight, when?”

Harvey York glanced at his watch. It was already ten o’clock at night.

“They should be arriving at twelve o’clock tonight, but these experts’ statuses are extraordinary.”

“They have all kinds of connections with the big families in Wolsing...”

Ethan Hunt figured out what Harvey York was

Chapter 693

thinking, and then reminded himself.

‘No matter. A powerful figure cannot control a local thug in his turf, anyway. People from Wolsing cannot do as they please in South Light.’

“Don’t hurt them.” Harvey said. “Just let them eat and rest well here for a few days, then send them back.”

Harvey York stood up. He would not allow the Yorks to heal Wayne York as they please.

Because Wayne York had already crossed the line.

...

Buckwood Airport, the biggest national airport in the country, was bustling with people.

That night, in front of the private area passageway that night, a row of cars arrived in an extremely discreet manner.

A Rolls Royce led all of the cars.

There were a dozen bodyguards from the Yorks

Chapter 693

family standing next to the cars, all of them highly imposing.

Yonathan York came out of the back of his car at that moment.

The Yorks were always extremely secretive. Usually, they would be seen driving only Lexuses.

However, the statuses of the experts from Wolsing that night were extraordinary, which was why the Yorks had to take them seriously.

The sight had shocked quite a few passers-by.

There was Yonathan York, who had been living a secluded life these past few years. He had rarely gone out, and even when he did, nobody knew who he was.

He stood in front of the car door and looked at his Patek Philippe watch on his wrist. It was already twelve o'clock at midnight.

“Let's go. The experts from Wolsing are almost here. We should hurry and fetch them.” Yonathan

Chapter 693

York ordered.

Stephen York was close behind him, but Quinton York did not follow.

At that moment, a team consisting of a few dozen people walked out of the passageway of the private area.

The team included Wolsing's most famous medical experts, along with their assistants and the most advanced equipment available.

Yonathan York walked up and flashed them a smile.

"Welcome, Mr. Baker, everyone..."

Tobias Baker was one of the top medical experts in Country H. He was a man just as popular as Oskar Armstrong, the best man in the medical field.

The Bakers' from Wolsing were the first medical family to have ever existed.

To have Tobias Baker here was enough to prove the Yorks' high rank and incredible connections.

Chapter 693

“Mr. York...”

Tobias Baker looked like he was over his sixties, but he still seemed full of high spirits.

“Please!”

Yonathan York waved his hand, inviting them inside the cars.

The medical team came over soon after with their equipment, and entered the designated cars.

Suddenly, the roars of propellers echoed all around them.

Chapter 694

Chapter 694

The deafening sounds of the propellers almost scared everyone away.

After a moment, the crowd had seen clearly that there were military-use armed helicopters after the white lights were shone at them.

A brief moment later, the crowd soon realized that there were armed military helicopters pointing white lights down at them.

“Why would the military suddenly appear out of nowhere?”

Everyone shared perplexed stares. Even Yonathan York was frowning slightly.

With the connections and relationships he had in the military, how could a scene like this possibly occur?

Chapter 694

Ten armed soldiers without symbols of their titles descended from the helicopters with ropes.

The man that led them seemed to be very young. He swiftly walked toward Tobias Baker and bowed.

“Mr. Baker, a batch of wounded soldiers were sent back from the Central America battlefield. Every single one of them is facing severe casualties. I’ve received orders to request you to operate on them as soon as possible. Please understand!”

After he was finished talking, he did not waste another second and took Tobias Baker away.

Immediately, Yonathan York walked up to him furiously and shouted.

“Presumptuous! Which team are you from?! Don’t you have rules to abide by?!”

“Mr. Baker was invited by us! Are you planning to oppose the Yorks?!”

“Who is your superior? Let him come out and see

Chapter 694

me! Doesn't he know who I am?!"

Yonathan York was emboldened, boiling with anger.

His connections with the military force in South Light ran extremely deep. He was confident that he would be given respect, no matter who the military superiors may be.

Yonathan did not expect the soldier to pull out a gun and point it right at his head. The soldier replied coldly, "I'm the one in charge of this operation!"

"The superiors gave us a rigid order, and saving my comrades is the most important thing right now! Whoever stops me, I'll kill them all!"

"Take him away!"

The soldiers with no titles immediately took Tobias Baker away from the Yorks, along with his team and the equipment..

After that, all of them boarded the helicopters.

The Yorks' bodyguards couldn't even move an inch.

Chapter 694

The soldiers were all oozing murderous intent, obviously having returned from war very recently.

Most importantly, they were all just ordinary soldiers.

How could people like them know who the Yorks were? How could they possibly have recognized Yonathan York?

They were only following orders. They would definitely deal with anybody who stops them from carrying out their tasks!

A man with a pen cannot reason with a man with a gun!

It was the first time in his whole life that a powerful man like Yonathan York was this frustrated. There was nothing he could do, even with the extraordinary ranking and status of the Yorks.

Now, he could only watch helplessly as the equipment was carried away.

The Yorks weren't prepared for a situation like this,

Chapter 694

so they couldn't react to it.

It was only after the helicopters left that Yonathan York snapped back to reality.

'How could Tobias Baker be taken away just like that?'

'They're all new recruits too, all extremely tanned.'

He could not remember a single face. Even if he wanted to find someone to plot revenge against, there was nothing he could do.

The whole thing had only taken a minute at most. It went by so quickly, the Yorks could not even finish reacting to it.

"Sir, what do we do now?"

The leader of the Yorks' bodyguards walked over with a face as dark as night. He was being held at gunpoint as well. He was powerless.

"Go back! What else can we do?!"

Yonathan York's face was full of disdain.

Chapter 694

Back at the Silver Nimbus Courtyard, Quinton York grew slightly startled after he was informed of what had happened.

Naturally, he also didn't expect that the Yorks would be intercepted so easily.

Telegram @chinesenovels

Chapter 695

Chapter 695

“Sir, with your connections, how could a few foot soldiers take away someone from you?”

Quinton York was perplexed by what he had heard.

Yonathan York frowned. “That’s right. Normally speaking, no military force in South Light would dare to even offend me, but somebody actually made their move on us this time...”

“Since he’s using new recruits, obviously he didn’t want to expose his identity.”

Quinton York began to speculate.

“Perhaps the military started having some qualms about us since Ethan Hunt is on our side now?”

“Is some major family trying to oppose us?”

“Or maybe, it’s that man...”

Chapter 695

Yonathan York frowned again. “There’s no evidence of anything right now. The thing is, their dignified excuse was that there were wounded soldiers who just came back to South Light from war, and that they needed to be operated...”

“I’ve gotten news of what happened. There was indeed a conflict on a smaller scale. A couple dozen people from the neighbouring country died, and there were only a few injured on our side.”

“The few injured soldiers are considered heroes in the military force. The superiors gave a rigid order to recruit the best medical experts to save them...”

“The people being deployed might be the comrades of said wounded soldiers...”

“If so, we really cannot do anything since they have their orders...”

Quinton York frowned as well. “Sir, is there nothing else we can do right now?”

“Wait. Just wait until Tobias Baker gets released.

Chapter 695

There's no way they can keep him forever. It seems like Wayne won't be able to attend the birthday banquet, after all..."

Yonathan York felt sorry for Wayne York.

"Rest assured, sir. Even if he cannot attend the banquet, his place in the family will still remain." Quinton York gave Yonathan words of comfort, then proceeded to walk away.

But after he left, he frowned and muttered to himself: "Is this part of the old fox's plan? Or just a mere coincidence...?"

Quinton needed Wayne York to attend the birthday banquet.

But without Tobias Baker and his team, there was no way that Wayne York would be awake. Quinton would have to rearrange his plans.

It was inevitable that his perfectly laid plans would have loopholes.

Yonathan York was in his room, staring at the

Chapter 695

ceiling. After a moment, he broke into a smile..

“Good fortune follows upon disaster. Disaster lurks within good fortune...”

“I might be able to let the two clash against each other this time, and I’ll be the one taking advantage of the benefits that come.”

“That man thinks that he’s hurting me, but he doesn’t know that he’s actually helping me...”

Yonathan York hurriedly made a few phone calls.

He arranged a long-term stay at the hospital for Wayne York, then contacted the military force through his connections.

The military could use Tobias Baker and his men freely. It did not matter when the military would let go of Tobias.

The Yorks would not hold anyone accountable either, even if Tobias were never to be released...

On the other side, Harvey York requested Tobias

Chapter 695

Baker and his team be sent to the front lines to operate on wounded soldiers. At the same time, all the contents and conversations done through Yonathan York's phone were all forwarded to him as well.

After studying them, Harvey chuckled.

Ethan Hunt frowned. "Sir York, is there a problem?"

Harvey York smiled. "This sly old fox... Looks like the Four Yorks aren't in complete control of the family."

"We might have been used by Yonathan this time."

"He knew Wayne was at Quinton's bidding..."

"Since Wayne is unconscious right now, Quinton will have to do a lot of things on his own."

"That old man wants to watch us fight while he sits there and reaps all the benefits."

"Then, we..."

"...should just sit tight and watch the show. This'll

Chapter 695

be a spectacular one.”

Harvey York’s expression was as cold as ice.

Telegram @chinesenovels

Chapter 696

Chapter 696

The time until Grandma York's birthday banquet was inching closer and closer. All of Buckwood was bathed in a joyous mood, as if the day was a public holiday.

Almost all of Buckwood knew.

The Yorks' had incredibly high status in Buckwood, and were truly Buckwood's top family.

All the first-rated families in Buckwood agreed that an invitation to the Yorks' birthday banquet was a big honor.

Many people took pictures of their invitations immediately after they had gotten theirs, to show off their status and ranking.

This showed the value and importance of Grandma York's birthday banquet that the Yorks held up to.

Chapter 696

The publicity even did their part to prove that.

Right before the day of the banquet, Xynthia Zimmer reluctantly brought home the invitations to the banquet.

She had to spend a long time begging her godparents for them.

Mandy Zimmer, on the other hand, was worried sick because of what had happened with Wayne York.

She dared not attend Grandma York's birthday, no matter what.

Who could possibly bear the consequences if the Yorks were to throw a fit of rage at the banquet?

However, she could not talk about this to anyone, and she did not know how to explain the situation to Xynthia Zimmer.

"If you're not going, then I'll go." Harvey York said, smiling.

Of course he was going. It would be his first time

Chapter 696

officially meeting with the Yorks after returning to Buckwood. Why wouldn't he go?

Xynthia Zimmer, on the other hand, was filled with excitement.

In her eyes, if Mandy Zimmer didn't attend, she could be alone with Harvey York.

Mandy Zimmer knew that she could not persuade Harvey York, so she instead turned to Xynthia Zimmer.

"You have to protect your brother-in-law! Don't let anyone hurt him!"

Xynthia Zimmer replied, "Sister, rest assured. My godparents are going with me, and they represent the Yates family!"

"The Yates family has a high status in Buckwood. Even the Yorks wouldn't dare to provoke us without reason!"

After hearing that, Mandy Zimmer was a bit at ease.

As for the other members of the Zimmer family,

Chapter 696

they were naturally unfit to attend the banquet.

The next day, at the Buckwood Exhibition Center, where the birthday banquet was held.

The whole place, along with a few commercial streets, were industries under the Yorks. They covered around six miles of road on both sides. Colorful lights shone all around the place, as if they symbolized birthday wishes for Grandma York.

As for the scene of the banquet, no expenses were held back in terms of decorations. Everything was done magnificently, as if the place was an actual throne room.

The Yorks were truly wealthy, and they spared no expenses.

After all, even their invitations were gilded in gold.

Countless celebrities and social media influencers were there as well.

Because Grandma York loved lively environments, the celebrities and influencers invited could

Chapter 696

represent almost half of the entertainment industry.

At this moment, the parking space in front was filled with luxurious cars.

Countless high-end cars like the Bentley, Porsche, and Maybach were present. It seemed the arriving cars wouldn't be stopping anytime soon.

Of course, the Yorks were still driving in their discreet Lexus as usual, but nobody once thought that they were poor.

The top models of Lexus were already worth the same price as a Benz or a Maybach.

Such people who would willingly spend so much on a banquet could not care less about a little bit more spent on a car, anyway.

All in all, the Yorks' connections were not to be underestimated. The guests that came to celebrate were all wealthy and respectable people.

An insignificant title like new upstarts of Buckwood that the Zimmers had couldn't compare to anybody

Chapter 696

here.

After arriving at the entrance and showing their invitations, Xynthia Zimmer and Harvey York easily got in the banquet.

Telegram @chinesenovels

Chapter 697

Chapter 697

Everyone was waiting in the living room while the celebration was still being prepared.

There were champagne towers and western buffets free for them to enjoy.

Harvey York and Xynthia Zimmer soon found some seats.

“Harvey... Harvey York, is that you?”

A voice called behind him.

Harvey York turned around and saw a cold beauty approaching him.

A few months had passed, but the aura between her eyes hadn't changed one bit.

Her teary eyes stared right at Harvey York. She was quite excited, and was barely holding back her

Chapter 697

emotions.

One of Buckwood's top-rated families, Rosalie Naiswell of the Naiswell family.

The two had interacted quite a bit during their time in Niumhi. Harvey York even gave her a ride before her departure from Niumhi.

But after leaving Niumhi, the two hadn't met for nearly three whole months.

Even after arriving at Buckwood, Harvey York had been extremely busy. He did not have any intention of seeing her at the moment.

"How could you not even see me after coming to Buckwood?"

Rosalie Naiswell's gaze shifted toward Xynthia Zimmer. An odd look flashed in her eyes..

"Rosalie, is this your friend?"

Another voice that sounded beside her.

A man dressed in a suit with dark lines walked over

Chapter 697

and sized up Harvey York.

Naturally, the man was Rosalie Naiswell's pursuer. He had subconsciously begun to see Harvey York as his rival.

But Harvey York ignored him, and then smiled at Rosalie Naiswell.

"I only recently settled down at Buckwood, so I'm quite busy recently. I don't really have enough time right now."

"When I've settled down, I'll find time to sit down with you."

"Of course! I'm free anytime!" Rosalie Naiswell swiftly replied, but she soon realized the slip of her tongue.

She covered her mouth immediately, dumbfounded by her words.

Xynthia Zimmer stood up and shot Rosalie Naiswell a challenging stare.

She thought that her brother-in-law would be her

Chapter 697

own, but suddenly there was another woman trying to steal him away! Enough was enough.

“Auntie, I’m sorry,” Xynthia Zimmer exclaimed. “But my brother-in-law isn’t free right now!”

Rosalie Naiswell froze for a while. Then she asked, “This girl...”

Harvey York glared at Xynthia Zimmer, then hurriedly put on a big smile.

“This is Mandy’s sister. She’s just a little kid, don’t mind her...”

“No wonder. I thought you already had another woman after we stopped meeting each other for a short while,” Rosalie Naiswell said.

Harvey York was speechless.

“This kid looks like she’s a high schooler. You can’t just say I got another woman who’s a high schooler.”

Rosalie Naiswell gave a sweet chuckle after seeing

Chapter 697

Harvey York speechless.

She was usually a cold beauty, but right now, she actually chuckled. The scene resembled flowers blooming in the winter, shocking beyond belief.

Seeing the two chatting quietly and laughing together, the man in the suit swiftly made a phone call.

After a moment, he laughed coldly and said, "I thought you were some big shot, but it turns out you're that so-called upstarts, the Zimmers' live-in son-in-law."

"The guests who could come here are more or less business elites. Everyone is worth at least millions!"

"We are all formally invited by the Yorks themselves."

"How could a live-in son-in-law like you be fit to come here?"

In the next second, the man grabbed the invitation out of Harvey York's hand and took a look at it. He

Chapter 697

burst out laughing.

“As expected from a live-in son-in-law! This invitation is for Mrs. Zimmer!”

“Does that mean that you came here using your wife’s invitation?”

“Rosalie, don’t be fooled by this live-in son-in-law. I’ve just inquired about him. He’s ~~filth~~ who depends on his wife!”

Telegram @chinesenovels

Chapter 698

Chapter 698

Harvey York didn't even flinch when facing the man's ridicule.

In his eyes, this clown had no meaning. Naturally, he wouldn't care.

Compared to the Yorks, this man was less than a speck of dust.

After seeing Harvey York's attitude, Rosalie had a slight change of mind.

Three months ago, he seemed so full of spirit to her; a man who could reject her own invitation.

How could he have possibly turned into someone who would simply swallow humiliation?

Could a three month period change a man so easily?

After taking a deep breath, Rosalie Naiswell

Chapter 698

reverted back to her icy demeanor.

She glared at the man and snapped coldly, “Bruce Cloude. Whoever I hang out with and befriend does not concern you now, does it?”

“If you’re willfully insulting my friend again, don’t blame me for being hard on you!”

Rosalie Naiswell spoke with the full aura and manner of a cold beauty.

Bruce Cloude was her pursuer, after all. After her chiding, he did not speak another word.

However, he grew to despise Harvey York even more.

‘What use is a filth who relies on his wife? I can trample him however I like, anyway!’

‘At least he still knows how to act like a live-in son-in-law. If he doesn’t, he’d be beaten to death sooner or later.’

“How are you doing?”

Chapter 698

Rosalie Naiswell had a lot to say, but she could only condense everything that she wanted to say at that moment to that one sentence.

“Hm. I’m doing good. I’ll invite you out for food again when I’m free,” Harvey York replied.

He didn’t show his intention for coming to the banquet, nor did he realize that Rosalie Naiswell was not in the right mind.

Right then, she studied Harvey absentmindedly.

‘Is this the same man from the antique fair then? The bold yet composed man I remembered?’

‘How could he turn into this after only a few months?’

Bruce Cloude seemed like he realized something as well. He sized up Harvey York once again, and then laughed.

“Rosalie. When I visited Master Naiswell before, he said he met a very capable young man in Niumhi..”

Chapter 698

“I assume he means this man in front of me?”

“If so, maybe he missed something. I don't see anything special about this man at all.”

“He's just a live-in filth, after all!”

Rosalie Naiswell glared at Bruce again and replied icily, “Whether he is filth or not, it's not determined by you.”

Even as she said that, she realized her heart had changed.

Three months ago, she would not hesitate to marry Harvey York no matter the cost.

But now that she was seeing him after three months, it seemed he had lost his radiance from before. Had everything that she saw about him a mere illusion?

If she had another chance to choose, she probably would not pick Harvey York anymore.

As she gazed at Harvey, she did not realize her eyes

Chapter 698

carried a hint of sympathy.

Seeing the change in Rosalie Naiswell's expression, Bruce Cloude broke into a gleeful smile.

He was worried he wouldn't have a chance to get closer to Rosalie Naiswell. He'd never expected this filth in front of him would actually give him such a wonderful opportunity!

"Filth! Can't you see that Rosalie doesn't want to talk to you? That she only greeted you just because of old times' sake?"

"You're unfit to even befriend her!"

"If you have at least a hint of self-awareness, you should know better and get out of here!"

Chapter 699

Chapter 699

Seeing Harvey York humiliated by two people who came out of nowhere, Xynthia Zimmer grew somewhat angry.

She pulled Harvey's arm and snarled coldly, "The two of you who came out of nowhere!"

"You're just a bunch of shortsighted people!"

"My brother-in-law is awesome! Especially compared to a wretched man like you!"

"You think he's scared of you?! He just doesn't care about you!"

"Because you're just an ant to him!"

In truth, Xynthia Zimmer had no clue of Harvey's real identity.

But a man who could buy her a property that cost

Chapter 699

millions of dollars without batting an eye, a man who could purchase the Spinning Restaurant in Buckwood Tower, was not someone who could be provoked so easily by a clown like Bruce Cloude.

“Oh, Harvey! What a cute sister-in-law you have!”

Bruce Cloude wasn't even perturbed. Instead, he gave them a scornful grin.

“I'm an ant? Alright, I'll admit it. In front of a man like Prince York, I am just an ant.”

“But I, Bruce Cloude, am from the Cloude family, the first-rated family in Buckwood! An existence like me isn't something you ordinary people could match, even after working for three whole lifetimes ...!”

Bruce Cloude was prideful.

Despite only being a collateral relative for the Cloude, he was already doing quite well for himself. If not, he wouldn't have dared to pursue Rosalie Naiswell.

Chapter 699

He wouldn't bat an eye not just to a live-in son-in-law, but even the Zimmers.

“Right. I heard that you're still unemployed? Out of respect for Rosalie, I'll even invite you to my company to work.”

“My company's hiring more bodyguards recently. The pay isn't that bad, either!” Bruce Cloude said arrogantly.

If he could make the man that Rosalie Naiswell looked up to work under him, how exhilarating would that be?

Even Rosalie Naiswell frowned at his words.

While she was doubting the feelings she previously had for Harvey York, there was no need for such ridicule.

Because of the unexpected turn of events, she did not say a word.

She stared right at Harvey York, wanting to see the

Chapter 699

response of the bold yet composed man she knew before.

Harvey York laughed and replied, “No thanks, everything that the Yorks have will belong to me after today. I’ll be quite busy soon after.”

“I appreciate your kindness.”

“I’ll appoint you as head of the security team when that happens.”

The words came out of his mouth like a strike of thunder.

His words shocked everyone in the room.

Not just Bruce Cloude and Rosalie Naiswell.

Even his sister-in-law that trusted him the most, Xynthia Zimmer, could not believe her ears!

‘My brother-in-law is the best.’

‘But... he’s planning to have the Yorks fall into his hands?’

Chapter 699

'How can this be possible?'

'Not just him, even Prince York himself would find it impossible!'

'Compared to a terribly powerful force like the Yorks, my brother-in-law is just an ant.'

"Hahaha...!"

After a few seconds of dead silence, Bruce Cloude burst out laughing.

Rosalie Naiswell herself was shocked beyond belief. She could not believe that Harvey would say something this ridiculous.

Even if Harvey was an extremely capable man, someone her grandfather considered to have a hidden potential...

So what?

It was clear to everyone what the Yorks represented in South Light.

Chapter 699

A family like that could not be toppled over in a span of a day.

Even if Harvey York did have the capabilities to do so, it would be impossible for him!

Something like this... Even in Rosalie Naiswell's eyes, it did not seem at all plausible.

Harvey York's words sounded like the daydreams of a fool!

Telegram @chinesenovels

Chapter 700

Chapter 700

Rosalie Naiswell was a bit disappointed in Harvey York, but she did not immediately expose him. Instead, she exclaimed icily, “Harvey York, I did not believe in you before, but you had proved with your own strength that you were capable.”

“Now, I want to see if you can do the same. Prove that you are right, and that you are actually capable!”

Bruce Cloude chuckled coldly.

“Since Rosalie wants this, I’ll be counting on it as well.”

“Once you’ve taken over the Yorks, I’ll make sure to be your security team leader. Please give me a chance to do so when that happens, CEO York!”

Harvey York actually treated that as an actual

Chapter 700

promise.

He sized up Bruce Cloude for a while. “Right, a scrawny body like yours doesn’t look like you’ll be fit as the security team leader. But since I’ve already promised you, I’ll make sure you get the position.”

“Make sure to get to the office on time.”

At that, Bruce Cloude could not hold himself back anymore.

He no longer had the intention to make fun of Harvey York anymore.

In his eyes, Harvey York was just a clown.

‘It’s difficult to imagine how hard someone would lie to himself to get to this point.’

‘This is just pathetic.’

If Bruce Cloude still had intentions of trampling on Harvey York, then right now, they all vanished completely.

Chapter 700

To him, Harvey York was unfit for him to even trample on.

Just then, a man wearing a white suit split the crowd and approached them from behind.

Bruce Cloude's expressions changed slightly when he saw the man.

This was not just anybody. He was the one who replaced the Silvas and took control of the Silva Corporation, Joel Flynn.

He was also one of Rosalie Naiswell's pursuers.

Joel Flynn immediately walked toward Rosalie Naiswell with a smile.

"Miss Naiswell, I've been looking for you. There's something here that I'd like you to see."

Rosalie Naiswell's attention was diverted. She asked curiously, "What is it?"

Joel Flynn smiled and said, "This is a gift that I'm

Chapter 700

planning to give Lieutenant Colonel Ethan later. It's an expensive one."

"Just to be safe, I was going to ask you to help me inspect the item once again..."

Everyone grew curious at his words.

Even Harvey York was no exception.

What would the Yorks give to make Ethan Hunt theirs?

Rosalie Naiswell laughed.

"If there's any need, I'm happy to be of service. What might the item be?"

Joel Flynn said quietly, "This is an antique Patek Philippe watch. There were only five of them produced back then. This is one of them, and it's very hard to come by..."

Gasp!

Everyone was shocked at what they heard.

Chapter 700

Patek Philippe was considered to be the king of all watches.

Not just anybody could get their hands on one. The ones who do would simply keep it for the next generation.

The Patek Philippe's watch, the Nautilus 5711, had increased its worth to around seventy-five thousand dollars.

An ordinary person could buy anything at this price. This was further proof of Patek Philippe's worth.

A limited-edition antique Patek Philippe watch carried unimaginable worth. In fact, its value went beyond people's expectations.

Hearing about Patek Philippe reminded Harvey of his good friend, the late William Bell.

William wasn't interested in racing cars or anything of the sort. The one thing that he was passionate about were watches.

Harvey spared no expense to give William his own

Chapter 700

Patek Philippe, Audemars Piguet, Rolex, Vacheron Constantin, and other luxurious watches. A lot of them were even antiques.

Of course, they were all gone now.

Joel Flynn laughed.

“I’ll let you all in on another little secret. This watch was given by the Silvas to the second master of the York family.”

“It’s said that this is a treasure acquired from William Bell, Prince York’s good friend from long ago...”